

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter 1

"Innocent proven guilty".

I didn't want to relive those memories but I could feel the weight of them pressing down on me, pushing their way into my consciousness. Why did I have to suffer for a sin that I did not commit? Was it my bad luck or it was someone's conspiracy?

No matter how hard I tried to explain in court that I was innocent I ended up being sentenced to 6 years in prison for attempted murder. An 18 year old who attempts to murder her own mother, that's just absurd. For the record I loved my mother like nobody's business but it changed the day I realised that she also believed that I tried to end her life. How could she betray me and humiliate my love for her like that. What about my elder brother Bailey and my father who also stood in the witness box claiming that I poisoned my mother's food. Traitors!...

Is there anyone who is going to believe my own side of the story.

I dragged my thoughts to reality when the nurse tried to force pills into my mouth.

I just wanted to punch her annoying face but the straitjacket wasn't helping not to mention the fact that my feet were cuffed to the bed.

"The best you can do here is open your mouth and drink the pills because trust me honey we have all day" She said placing a number of the bitter pills into my mouth.

I hid them under my tongue, I wasn't going to drink them knowing very well that I'm not crazy. This was conspiracy. After spending just 2 months in a normal jail, they claimed that I was mentally unstable so I was dragged to a mental asylum jail which became my home. I already spend 5 years here and I couldn't wait to be released the following year. Of course after I was released I was never going back to my family they betrayed me. I would start living my own life the way I want.

Anyway since I was free from the straitjacket and the cuffs, I dragged my sore limbs to the untidy bathroom and helped myself.

I looked at the stranger's face staring back at me on the mirror, Ohhh that was my face but I couldn't recognise my face anymore. I was 23 years old, grown, with no proper care to my skin, no good diet and no hair treatment. I had dark circles, my skin was pale being light was not helping, my hair was just a total mess and I was skinny as fuck.

"Ahhh April just be patient next year you will be out of here ok.." I forced a smile talking to myself. Eww bad breath, I don't remember the last time I used toothpaste and the pills they force me to drink doesn't even do me any favours.

I dragged myself again back to my single bed balanced on bricks and threw myself. I have been living in isolation for the past three days and I was damn hungry. I don't even know why they isolated me anyway I'm not crazy, it was that maniac who attacked me first because I was staring at her.

I sigh remembering my first day when I was taken to the asylum. I cried my lungs out but it just worsened the situation for me. They said I had hysteria, so I received a number of electrical shocks that day.

I was a weakling, I became unconscious for the whole week but now electrical shocks are the order of the day for me.

"April June you have a visitor" A hoarse voice startled me. It was the guard cuffing my hands and legs so that I could walk out.

A visitor? No one paid a visit after the judge's verdict until today. I remember the looks of people I thought were my friends, they were disgusted and they were full of hatred, they despised me. To them I was a murderer.

Curiosity killed the cat but the cat got nine lives. I was so curious, I wanted to know who it was who paid me a visit. The guard dragged me to a chair.

I sat down.

She was facing the other side but because of her scent I knew it was the one that pushed me out of her vagina.

"What are you doing here Mrs June" I asked almost whispering. What was she doing here huh?I was angry that she did not believe me but her visiting me after years I became hopeful thinking that we could mend our destroyed relationship.

She turned flashing a million dollar smile,with her hair in neat curls,her hands manicured wearing LV from head to toe.

"The orange overall suits you,well I'm just here to tell you that the June family is progressing without you,least you didn't see it in the news,your father and I own a third company now we are doing just fine. I will also make sure that you stay here for good and never come back" She hissed.

"Mummy it's me your daughter,your princess. It's me April.You carried me for nine months mummy do you really think I could do that to you.Mom why would I try to kill you huh.Mother I know the evidence was against me but trust me I didn't poison your food.Yes I cooked the food but I didn't poison it.I swear with my life I didn't. You have to believe me." I begged and I was close to crying.

"Save me the pathetic look,its for everyone's good that you're here.Its for the best,we are living a good life in your absence and I want to remain that way". She said with an evil smirk that's when it hit me.

I chuckled in disbelief. "That day you sent all the helpers on an unexpected off,you insisted that I cook for you that day.I tasted the food before going to Bailey who called me.I remember when I was going to see Bailey I passed by you holding a bottle of pills I...asked you what it was you said they where for your blood pressure. You never had blood pressure before and I had tasted the food.There was no one else around for me to claim that you may have been poisoned by someone else.The doors were closed.So that only means you...you poisoned yourself mother to frame me... I wasn't affected by the food when I ate it but the pills you had that day were....mom how could you do this.It was all your doing,the CCTV footage missing,me going to jail and ended up in mental asylum it was your doing right.I'm your daughter for crying out loud who jeopardize with their children's future like that."

She laughed." Ohhh my poor baby you realise that now.Don't you think its a little too late?I deserve a standing ovation,a great mastermind indeed.I never felt anything for you,you were a mistake to begin with."She flipped her hair.

I looked at her in disbelief, this woman here was my mother.I once called this Satan's side chick my mom.

"You are my mom,how can you do that to me.What do you mean I'm a mistake huh?"

"Are you dumb or you're just pretending to be,yes I gave birth to you but my husband is not your father ok.Your surname is not June.One silly mistake my marriage was put on risky just because of you.You wanted to know why I framed you right, I did it because I hate you,I wish I never had you"She said angrily.

"So you,your son and your husband where in this together The people I thought were my family.So who is my father?" I managed to ask.

"I don't know and I don't care.If you're so keen to know about him then that's up to you to figure it out" She stood up flipped her and catwalked leaving me shocked like that.

I was beyond the words hurt,angry,broken and disappointed.I didn't even realizes when I was taken back to the isolation.I only came back to reality when the guard threw me into my room.

I knew I was not my parent's favourite. Bailey was always thee perfect child.He was like a golden trophy that they showed around while me on the other hand was just a bronze medal.However I didn't know that I was a living lie,a woman with no identity.I sat down on the cold floor trying to process everything. This was definitely the final nail to the coffin.

"So who am I God...who am I...who am I.. Haven't you punished me enough God...haven't you....what did I do...what sin did I commit to deserve this" I punched the wall repeatedly till my knuckles started bleeding. I couldn't cry because I was no longer that weakling but I was hurt to the core.All I wanted was a punching bag in the gym but I was in isolation so I couldn't get access to the gym.

I sat down for as long as I remember. When the light from the tiny window started diming I knew it was evening. I was hungry,broken,dirty and in pain.

When it was completely dark someone entered my cell and I knew exactly what they wanted but I was nowhere close to giving up my cookie. The male staff at the asylum had a tendency of raping the patients luckily God did me a favour on this one,I was never a victim.Training martial arts and boxing really came in handy.They provided those self defense services for their psycho patients but I made sure I train as well,after all it me,myself and i. In the outside world there was no one else to protect me apart from God but we all know God helps those who help themselves.

Anyway whoever had entered my cell tried to touch me,even though I couldn't see properly I used my sense of hearing and punched him repeatedly until I heard him falling down. I took the keys and opened my cell.

Other three guards were standing there like horny dogs.Phew this was going to be a long night.

"Gentleman how can I help you" I looked at them with my arms crossed.

They looked at each other shocked that I came out alive because trust me these people were scary.

The other one with a scary mark on his forehead smirked. "So he was quick, its our turn now young lady. I heard that you're feisty. Exactly my type". The other two laughed.

I gave him a knockout punch on his stupid face and he fell down.

I sat on his chest and used the keys to cut him on his forehead.

"I crowned you, next time you will know very well not to mess with me." The other two were scared as shit.

I passed them and went to the doctor's office. I didn't have the time to knock i just opened and he was busy banging some nurse from the back. He was 62 years old for crying out loud who taught him those styles. Eww nasty!

"WTF are you crazy" The doctor said trying to cover themselves.

"Duhh I'm in a mental asylum do you expect me to be normal. Anyway you are busy banging each other in here instead of checking the patients. People are raped in the cells but you don't care about it. Well at least tomorrow the government officials are coming to inspect I will make sure I

bring up this issue.Wonders shall never end with a wrinkled dick like that you also know the doggystyle. Now you can make her cum.Keep it down nurse its not like he got a big dick or something.As for you Mr Jones couldn't you see she was about to fake an orgasm"

I chuckled and banged the door.

Mentioning the issue about the government officials was going to come in handy.This mental asylum I ruled it, so yea it was my Queendom.

End of chapter1

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2

"Its just me,myself and *i..solo ride until I die* *coz I got me for life"*

April.

I slept in my usual cell with other inmates,I didn't go to the isolation. I lived with other three inmates who were truly nutcases.The first one named Jenny Jordan had schizophrenia a mental condition when one disintegrate in the process of thinking and is drawn to the world of fantasy,she was in jail because of kidnapping her neighbor's husband thinking she was taking her lover to the honeymoon. Its not only her one kidnap case though,so she was sentenced to

12 months in the asylum. The other two Nicki Simmons and Kiara Chester had bipolar. These two were involved in domestic violence so they each had 12 months as well. Nicki's mother was also at the asylum she doesn't want to talk about the reason but rumors has it that in the late 80's she gave birth to a still born, however she believes that she gave birth to a healthy babyboy. After giving birth to Nicki she was disappointed because she wanted a son to fill the void of the dead one. So because of that she became crazy. You would see her playing with dolls stuff like that. Its a pity really.

Anyway these three woman in their early twenties were not necessarily my friends but we tolerated each other. I knew how to handle them when they had their mental attacks so yea they respected me for that.

I woke up because Jeny and Kiara were fighting.

I stopped them because they were annoying me. Nicki was fast asleep.

"What's wrong with the two of you?" I asked holding them apart.

"She was snoring and it was so irritating" Kiara exploded.

"Is it my fault that I was snoring, do anyone control what they do when they are asleep." Jeny roared.

I gave them both an angry look.

" Seriously i couldn't get my beauty sleep because you two were fighting... Arggh.Did you two had your pills last night" I asked.

I knew they didn't take their pills so I forced them to take them and they did.However the damage was already done they had disturbed my sleep.

I dragged my angry self to the bathroom.

At least it was tidy than the one at the isolation cell.

I did my hygiene process and went back to the mental cases.They were done cleaning the room.They all bathed and we went to the dining hall.This day we received special treatment because of the inspection.

Instead of steamed bread,cabbage and soup we had bacon,eggs and a slab pie for breakfast.

After we were done enjoying ourselves I was summoned by the doctor.

"Mr Jones I had you called me" I was disgusted by him shame.I even felt like puking.

"Well about what you said last night, can we make a deal to keep your mouth shut" Straight to the point I like that.

"So what do you have to offer for me not to tell the officials of Georgia that you let the guards rape the patients and the living conditions here aren't pleasant at all..?" I asked.

"I will make sure you are out of this place in one piece because your mother wants you dead" He said keeping a straight face.

I was no longer shocked at all. That's Satan's side chick what would you expect. "That is not enough to keep my mouth shut Mr Jones trust me if I tell the officials what happens here you will be behind the bars in a blink and remember they are bringing the journalist your little reputation will be tarnished".

He grinded his teeth. "What else do you want?"

"I know you are working with my mom to keep me here. So I want you to get me all my documents and when I'm out of here I want a place to live in and a job even cleaning a restaurant will be fine. One more thing our diet here should be improved as long as I'm here. Also we don't want nasty guards in our cells even when they are horny they better masturbate."

I could see he was pissed but he couldn't say it.

I walked to the door and stopped.

"Also whatever Julian June is planning I need to know all about everything and trust me if you can fulfill my demands your nasty secret will be safe with me "

He nodded, I smiled. "it was good doing business with you Mr Jones "

I banged the door and walked out.

Well as long as I can get out of here, I will keep my mouth shut but I will definitely come back to make things right.

I walked back to my cell to find the room cleaned our bed covers changed and new overalls on the bed. Even my inmates were looking fine.

"Wow what do we have here" I asked

"Well thanks to the inspection we are living like Queens for just one day" Nicki said crooningly.

"And where were you?" Kiara asked with an eyebrow raised.

"I was at Jones' office we had a deal and it seems like I will be released with you guys" I sat down.

Jeny gave me an old-fashioned look. "Are you sleeping with that old wrinkled dickhead to get yourself out of here".

I laughed."No of course not, I kinda threatened to tell the officials about the conditions here so he made a deal to get me out of here."

"Ohhh ok,we heard your mother visited yesterday what did she want?" Kiara asked.

"To inform me that I'm not a June and everything the food poisoning I was accused of was their plan...with her as a mastermind. She refused to tell me who my actual father is,she said that is for me to find out." I said angrily.

"Ohhh I'm so sorry April,you should have been shocked to find out that you're an illegitimate child" Kiara said hugging me.

"Don't stress it friend I'm fine.Such is life,expect the unexpected.Even your own shadow leaves you when its dark." I sighed.

"But something doesn't add up April. Why did she do that when you turned 18, why couldn't she get rid of you when you were young. I mean if you were a mistake she could have dumped you or given you up for adoption. Also suddenly they got super rich when you were sentenced. I mean yes you were rich but they suddenly became super rich owned companies, recreational centres and golf clubs. Ain't that suspicious to you. I may be paranoid but I can't help but think that maybe there is something she is not telling you.?" Jeny can be a mental case but she is super intelligent.

"Now that you have said it, I think that woman is playing with something here. If she could keep a secret of me not being a June, God knows what more secrets she is keeping" I said thoughtfully.

"I think them attaining the riches has something with you being here at the mental asylum. Maybe the riches they got has something to do with your father and your identity don't you think so? In the days of your case they made it in the headlines. Two weeks after you were imprisoned they already a company that quick. The whole family had a networth of 10 million. Its just suspicious." Kiara said.

"I need to figure that out.I need to know how they got the companies for the record Mr June was just a manager.What should I do."I sighed.

"I have an idea" It was Nicki,everyone looked at her and shook their heads.Well we never took her seriously because she is a real nutcase.

"Whaat you don't trust me.Look I got some few bucks,some clothes and I have a way which can get you out of here.You need a phone to go on the internet and google everything" She was serious and that sounds like a plan.

"So you want her to roam around the streets of Georgia all alone.Besides everyone knows her,her case was very popular.She will be recognized" Kiara whom we saw as the mother of the cell asked.She was always concerned about everyone's well being.

"And where on earth did you get all those things from Nicki?" Jenny asked.

"Man think with their dicks so yea I have been fucking this nurse. So getting this things was a lot easier. Also you Jenny you will go with April tonight. Kiara and I will be here and handling things from this side. Just buy the phone and come back. Don't worry about April being recognized she is grown, ugly, skinny and pale no one will know that its her".

Ok I might have overestimated Nicki she is still a nutcase.

" Why can't you just go and buy the phone for me Nicki." I asked.

"I can't because if I do I might fight someone out there. I have been having attacks recently" She had a point.

"Ok then I will go with Jenny."

I wasn't sure of the whole plan but I was willing to give it a try.

The inspection went on well. These crooks covered everything up and pretended like they took special care of their patients. Around 8pm we gathered on my bed discussing our plan.

"So Nicki where will we get the sedatives" I asked because the plan was to sedate the guard on the door to the hallway.

"Arggh you guys are just stupid, these guys force us to take sedatives and we all know you don't drink them but throw away. However Nicki Simmons is intelligent, I store mine for future purposes."

Ohhh here goes the bragging.

"Just show us the pills Nicki and stop bragging about using brains that you don't have." Jenny was getting impatient.

Nicki went and took her pillowcase. A number of sedatives were stored in there. Well hats off for that.

"I knew one day they would come in handy." She said with pride.

"Ok now we got the pills but how are going to give them the pills, and how are we going to get out of this cell" I asked.

"Well leave that to me, I'm going to seduce the guard no one says no to Nicki. I seduced the nurse and guess what when he fucked me, he was groaning..." There she goes. When did we been get there.

"Ok save your nasty details to yourself we get it you will seduce the guard but there are some guards at the gate and all around,what are er gonna do about that?" Jenny asked.

"Well that's where the clothes I have for you guys come in handy." She stood up and came with the nurses uniforms and surgical masks.

"Ahhh seriously Nicki are we gonna go to the mall with psychiatrist uniforms" Jenny complained.

"Do you maybe have a better plan.?You are not going for a fashion week honey you are sneaking out of the mental asylum.." Kiara was annoyed.

"Ok you two don't fight,at 10 pm we need to put the plan in motion" I said and they all nodded.

Well maybe I'm not all alone after all.

I started pacing up and down. I was nervous.

"Will you calm down nothing will happen ok, just stick to the plan" Nicki said.

"Well you are used to sneaking out this my first time".

"Its about time" Jenny walked in fully dressed like a nurse with a surgical mask and a black hoodie.

"It seems like you can't wait any longer, let me go and change as well.." I took the clothes and walked to the bathroom. I changed as well. For the first time in 5 years I was wearing something else besides the orange overall.

"I'm good to go", I said walking out of the bathroom.

"Now it's my turn to do my acting skills." Just for the record Nicki is 20 years old, studying film and theatre. However her mental condition jeopardized her studies.

"Ok 1....2.....3 action!" Kiara exclaimed.

"Heeeelp....hello out there....I need a little help here" Nicki shouted in a seductive voice.

I was suppressing a laughter, seriously you should have seen that.

She had removed the top of her overall and was left with the white inner top.

Well her planned worked he came within a few minutes. Jenny and I were in bed so that he won't see what we were wearing.

"I heard you screaming, what's wrong..." He asked, carefully studying Nicki's body.

"Well I kinda need someone who can help me take of my clothes....ummm I'm horny and I need servicing" She said taking the rest of the overall.

The guard swallowed hard and we knew the plan worked.

He opened the door with the ID card and came in.

When he turned locking the door, the four of us attacked him and brought him down with me on the top. I punched him repeatedly thinking about the day of the case, the things that Satan's side chick told me, the betrayal. I was venting it all on him. Kiara pulled me off him.

"Enough April you need to go now, we don't have much time ok"

"What you gonna do with him?" I asked.

"We gonna feed him the sedatives and put him back to his place so that they don't realise that he is missing. You need to hurry ok. Use his ID card to open the gate. The guards at the gate you have to distract them you are geniuses" Nicki said handing me a few bucks.

"Well its now or never let's go" Jenny said.

"Make sure you come back before they realize that you're not here.." Kiara said and we ran out.

"So what's the plan?" Jenny asked.

"We have to destruct them by pretending that a certain patient is acting up."

"Ok let's do this" Jenny said.

We ran to the guards with the surgical masks on.

"There is a bipolar patient in Wing C we need your help we can't calm him down.He knocked down the guards he is dangerous." I was panting to make sound real but I had my fingers crossed.

"Ohhh shit let's go" Thankfully they bought that little act.

Jenny and I didn't waste time. We used the ID to open the gate and ran for our lives.

The shopping centre was 2 km away,we ran till my feet were numb.

"Phew ohhh...my...God...let's rest for ...a while.." Jenny said panting.

"We don't have time Jenny right now they are probably doing a roll call. We should be back before they realise we are missing. I can handle the electrical shocks but can you?"

She immediately stood up

"Ok let's do this shit,I don't wanna be electrocuted."

We continued running till we could see the city lights.

"We are here yeeeeey!" Jenny exclaimed.

I was just a nervous wreck. The last time I was at a place like this I was 18.

"Don't be nervous we got this." Jenny dragged me to this amazing gadget shop. We had removed the surgical masks because we would look suspicious but we wore our hoodies.

Thankfully we bought the phone without any problem and walked out of the shop.

"Ohhh I need to buy some pizza, wait for me." Jenny took a few bucks that were left and ran.

Seriously in a situation like this she was thinking of pizza!

End of chapter2

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter3

"Yours truly ...Jon,Danger and Joss"

Love her?Yes i did truly with all my heart but what did she do.Betrayed me like that.There had been a time in my life when I allowed myself to remember that she no longer existed because of me.I would carry the burden of that guilty for the rest of my life but then again she deserved it.

I cursed abruptly as just in front of me a young woman started to cross the road without looking causing me to stamp my foot down on the brakes.My car screeched in a halt in front of her as

she froze and turned around facing towards me.

I had a momentary impression of her shocked face, big eyes, shaped delicately feminine face, with black long messy hair which was tousled by the strong breeze. Not so tall, not short either with an hour glass body but skinny she was wearing white pants and a black hoodie. However as my mind mentally digested these visual facts I was fuelled by anger.

"What the fuck is she thinking?" I cursed and hooted at her.

As shock faded her eyes it wasn't guilty or gratitude that replaced it but anger toward me as though I was the one to blame for her foolishness.

For a second it seemed as if she was about to walk right up to my car and shout at me but before she could another female figure wearing the same clothes surprisingly came and dragged her away as the car driver's started hooting growing impatient of course.

Wait she looked familiar.

Anyway I continued with my journey cursing all the way till I reached my mansion.

I parked my car and kicked the door open cursing at the same time.

Gareth was busy muffing a slut on my couch.

"WTF are you doing in my house...you whore get out of my house right now" I roared, scaring the whore he was with. She wore her clothes and ran out immediately.

"Whats wrong with you?" Gareth asked.

"What's wrong is you bringing bitches in my house and muffing them on my expensive couches"
I said angrily.

"Wait a minute is it Jon,Joss....?" He asked.

"Noo its yours truly Danger.I'm back missed me already." I said with an evil grin.

"Fuck how did Danger come...you were quite calm when you left...I mean Jon was calm...and
Danger when did you come." He asked.

"This girl just came right out in front of me like that ,what possessed her to do that...Didn't she realize how close she has come to causing an accident.What if my brakes had failed to work so swiftly or if I had skidded or I have not been able to stop.?" I gulped down whisky like it was water.

Gareth sat up straight."So you are telling me you took over because of that. I mean Jon could have handled the situation well and besides you just don't take control Danger you only come out when Jon is hurt".

I sat down. "He was close to being hurt so I came out."

He sighed."Why don't you let Jon get treated Danger?"

"I can't let him be treated because people will take advantage of him and he will be hurt again. I exist because I can handle that pain. Killing me is not an option" I gulped the whisky again.

I have been living I mean Jon have been living with Dissociative Identity disorder since he was 21 now he is 30. So it's been 9 years now. The mental condition is popularly known as DID or multiple personalities. So far it's only three personalities that exist in the body. Yours truly Jon- the owner of the body, calm, soft, caring, loving and a weakling. Then there is Danger- evil, cunning, murderer, violent and emotionless. Lastly there is Joss-.. funny, cheerful, jolly but depressed and suicidal deep down.

How they were created is a story for another day.

"But you are being unfair Danger. Jon wants to be treated but you don't allow him." Gareth and my two other friends (Max and Lewis) are the only guys who know about this. We are childhood friends. Well they are Jon's friends not mine. I just tolerate them.

"You don't tell me what to do ok. It is Jon who created me and Joss so only he can destroy us not some stupid treatment. Don't annoy me anymore or I will fucken shoot your brains out. Now if you excuse me I have to get my handsome sleep."

I left.

"Near death experience"

April.

I was so lost in my thoughts when Jenny ran off to buy some pizza. Everything has changed the main roads, the cars, the buildings. It seems like they have been renovated while I was in mental asylum prison. I missed out on a lot while in that jail.

Everything felt so new, even the breeze was different.

I was so caught up in the beauty of the place when a sudden screech of a car brought me back to reality. Without realising I had started to cross the main road without looking properly. However that in no way excused the maniac dangerousness of the speed at which the driver of

the car have been driving.I turned to look at the totally fury in his eyes as he glowered at me.

Of course my own shock held me motionless.However the man was outrageously, dangerously good-looking with thick,ice-blond,well groomed hair which was trimmed on the sides,chilling ice grey eyes,well chiselled jawline and full sexy lips.Even though he was in the car I couldn't help but notice the broad shoulders and muscles.But none of that compensated the fact that he nearly ran me over.I was so determined to step towards the car and give "Mr Sexy Lips" a piece of my mind the driver behind him hooted impatiently and Jenny came and dragged me away.

"Hey snap out of it.Are you crazy what were you thinking" She shouted at me.She was annoying me, her voice sounded like bees.

"I'm sorry I was just caught up in the moment that I didn't realise I was crossing the road." I said in annoyance.

"Ohhh then you realised you were almost ran over but you didn't even mover,instead you were at a staring contest with that blondy guy." She was dragging me.

"I just wanted to give him a piece of my mind,he has been driving like a maniac to have been forced to halt with such a screech.That was a near death experience." I defended myself.

"Whatever let's hurry back I'm sure they are doing the roll call at our wing now" She started jogging.

"Ohhh crap I almost forgot" Truly I had for a moment forgot that I was a prisoner thanks to the city lights and well umm Mr Sexy Lips.

"Yea let's go.." We started running again and after some time we had reached the asylum.

"What now" she asked

"We definitely cannot go back through the gate we have to jump over the wire at the basketball caught" I suggested.

"You're right but it's not gonna be easy" She said.

We went to the caught and I helped her to jump over. I jumped too thankfully didn't get hurt. We tiptoed and went to one of the bathrooms which were near our wing.

"What now?" She asked.

"We have to go through the ceiling honey we don't have much of a choice and we have to make sure we jump exactly in our cell." I said and she nodded

"Well from this bathroom our cell is on the third" She said.

"Cool then" We managed to go into the ceiling and started crawling making sure we don't make noise. Luckily we jumped into the bathroom of our cell. Kiara and Nicki came in running.

"Ohhh my God we were so worried what took you so long. Please change hurry they are on the other cell next to ours" Nicki said giving us our overalls and taking the piazza from Jenny.

We quickly changed and hid everything that could look suspicious.

I quickly went into my blankets and pretended to be snoring.

After some minutes we heard our cell being opened.

"Wake up!!!" The nurse shouted.

Nicki pretended to be yawning, while I was annoyed.

"You are so annoying" Nicki said.

"Nicki Simmons" She said.

"The bitch is here" Nicki said and the nurse frowned. I bet they shared the same dick or something.

"Jenny Jordan" She continued.

"In flesh bitch" She said trust Jenny to be rude.

"Kiara Chester".

" Alive and well"Kiara answered.

"April June" She said and I frowned.

"Its just April no June...I'm just April" I said.

"How come all of you are here.I expected to electrocute you guys.I mean I couldn't wait." She frowned.

"You need some dick in your life.Get out of here." Nicki shouted and the nurse just clicked her tongue and left.

After we were sure that they are gone. We sat on my bed because it was at a corner.

"What should we do with the guard's ID,im pretty sure when he wakes up he will remember everything." I was worried.

"Don't worry I didn't feed him sedatives only but also a lot of those trash they give us.I'm sure when he wakes he won't even remember a thing".

" But what about his ID card"I asked.

"Let me take that back" Nicki took it and left.After a few minutes she was back.

"Done.Now can we eat the pizza already I'm hungry."

"Wait don't they CCTV here" Jenny looked worried.

"At this side it doesn't work so relax".

We started eating the pizza, sharing jokes and laughing. After we were done. We switched the mobile phone I had bought and connected to the WiFi. Well Nicki knew the password so year it was easier.

I started searching about the June family's business. All the riches started when the case was being held. Important information was not publicized expect the people they had business deals with.

At least I had some information. Once I'm out I would start to visit The Jackson family, The Johns and lastly The McClain.

"Well this idea is stupid you want to visit those families. Do you know that they are business tycoons, people of high rank in business. They are feared especially the McClain family. Their son Jon McClain is the most feared he is a dangerous businessman you don't wanna mess with. One wrong move you will go missing and no one will look for you. So you think you just going to show up and say hey there you're doing business with the June family I want to know when that started and why...that will be you being paranoid and stupid"

Nicki reprimanded me the following morning when I share my idea with her.

"So what should I do, I don't have a choice Nicki. After all these families are the ones who made important deals with Julian and her husband" I said

"By living with nutcases have you become one as well. April listen this is important and serious. This is different from sneaking out of the asylum and kicking the guard's nuts. This is about your identity April. You are just April you need to know who you are, so don't make hasty plans which will just prove to be fatal for you in the future. You must know people you are dealing with, these people are dangerous especially the McClains. You must draw a fool proof plan, be a mastermind. You have to think dangerously just like them, you have to be cunning for you to succeed." Kiara said as well.

"Fine I hear you. I will think of better plan" I sighed.

"Ohhh by the way we heard that you had a near death experience you almost got ran over by some blonde guy yesterday" Nicki sat down waiting for me to spill the beans.

"Ohhh Mr Sexy Lips.."

"Mr whaaat!!!" Both Kiara and Nicki questioned

I flushed a little. Now what on earth prompted me to use that particular description of him out loud?

"Err...nothing... Ummm let me go and take a bath its almost breakfast time." I quickly ran to the bathroom leaving the two laughing.

End of chapter3

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter4

"I can't remember to *forget you"* (Yours truly Jon, Danger and Joss)

When I woke up I was lying, still dressed, in bed and Max was sitting on a chair next to it watching me. My room had been tied up smelling polish and coffee.

"What are you doing here?" I asked groggily. My throat felt sore and my head ached.

"I feel sick". Immediately I ran to the bathroom. It seemed like a lifetime before my stomach disgorged its unwanted contents. I cleaned my mouth after and went back to Max.

Groaning, I rolled over and buried my face into the pillow.

"Drink this concoction, you will be fine" He gave me a glass full of slimy green substance.

"Don't even think about what's inside just drink. It will help with the hangover" He said standing up facing to the window drinking his coffee with one hand in his pockets.

Max and Lewis Jackson they are twins and the eldest 32 years old and they are my cousins. Gareth Johns is the youngest 29 year old. My only friends.

Anyway I drank the disgusting substance.

"I don't remember taking alcohol last night" I said.

"You don't remember because when you came back Danger had taken control" He sighed and sat down.

I sat down attentively. "W-what ...it's been long since Danger took control.Did he perhaps hurt anyone or messed up one of my business deals...?" I asked.

"Thats what surprises me.We all know that if Danger takes control its either someone will be in a coma or a business deal will go wrong but yesterday it was different he didn't fight or get any tattoo or come back with bitches. He just drank my expensive whisky and slept.Gareth called me thinking maybe he will do something stupid but no when we came to check on him,he was fast asleep,snoring sounding like a pressure cooker.

I was shocked." Whaaaat! Danger did not do anything?. I mean how come its been long since he took control.After killing Katie I thought that the next time he comes back he will cause more harm"

"Jon do you maybe know what may have triggered him to take control"Max asked.

" I wasn't angry.I had visited Katie's grave yesterday. I was calm and I found the closure I needed.I don't remember how he could have come out. I don't remember anything "I tried to remember but its like the memory was erased from my brain.

"Don't stress it ok.You have an important meeting with the shareholders today.Be careful not to trigger Danger or Joss into taking control because they will jeopardize everything. This is a big deal for us."he said.

"Arghhh its already 8:15 can you call my PA and tell her that I maybe a little bit late for the meeting." I said going to my bathroom.

"Sure" He said taking my phone.

I took a quick bath and wore my navy blue slim fit suit and a white shirt. I brushed my hair. I was good to go.

I went downstairs and found Max and Lewis waiting for me. Gareth was not there.

"Hey Lewis, where is Gareth" I asked.

"Ohhhh he left just now an issue came at the golf clubs so he had to leave. He is sending his PA to stand up for him in the meeting." Max explained.

"Looking good to impress huh" Lewis said giving me a shoulder bump.

Unlike Max, Lewis is jolly and cheerful no wonder they are not identical twins. They are just two individuals that shared a womb and born on the same day. They are totally different.

"I always impress" I grinned.

"Not always,you are still crushing on your PA and she is still rejecting you.What's her name again" He laughed.

"Ruth,her name is Ruth.She is just playing hard to get but wait till I bang her she will come back wanting more." I said.

"Well I think its for the best if she keeps on rejecting you Jon. The last thing we want is another Katie situation. I think its better for you to just stick to whores.Now if you don't mind can we go to the meeting we will be late." Max is a straight talker like that.He is always serious and doesn't take any bull.Also he is the one who understand Danger because they just vibe,on the other hand Lewis is just Lewis he understand and vibe with Joss while Gareth on the other hand vibes with me Jon.

"You need whore-therapy ,you're too dry Max.When last did you get laid" Lewis asked mocking Max,who just shook his head taking the keys of my favourite Porsche.

"We are using your favourite baby" He knew I didn't like to use my Porsche.

Anyway we drove to my company because that's where the meeting was being held.

"Morning Mr McClain,I'm glad you're here early." My PA who I have a crush on said as she followed me to my office.

"Hy Ruth" I said lazily.I have made my intentions clear to her way back that I wanted her but for some reason Danger have been messing things up for me whenever I tried to take her out.

"I thought you would want me to brief you on the possible legal complexities of the proposed shareholders meeting." She said going through her files,obviously ignoring my eyes which were

piercing through her skin. She was just perfect with the pale skin tan and perfectly trimmed brunette hair. She had long beautiful legs and slender body. Just perfect!

"Why have you not returned my call?" I asked.

"When will you be free to have dinner with me?" I asked again.

"Not this week I'm afraid". She said firmly.

"I have missed you. It's been so long since we sat down and talk. You know how I feel about you.. I just want us to try.. I know I sound desperate but I really wanted to try it out. After Katie's death I wanted another relationship with a woman who understands me and Ruth fit perfectly for that role.

"Stop trying to flatter me Jon McClain. Look I know very well that there are scores of women besides me in your life so don't try and tell me that you missed me...and..." Before she finished I smashed my lips on hers. Best way to shut a girl up right..

Her body trembled violently beneath my hands and she made no move to stop me. We kissed like our lives depended on it.

Someone cleared their throat that's when we stopped. Ruth was now blushing, playing hard to get huh.

"The meeting is about to start" Max was really annoyed and I knew where he was coming from. He was concerned about me and playing big bro of course.

"I want you to accompany me to this meeting." I said to Ruth.

"Things have changed a lot rather since we have discussed this matter. For a start the shareholders...--" She started briefing me on our way to the boardroom.

The other reason why I liked her. She was a hardworking woman who understood business very well.

I accepted to chair the meeting and it went on very well. We won the deal. Thanks to our negotiator who knew what she was doing.

While people were congratulating us Mr and Mrs June walked up to us.

They annoyed me really. If it weren't for the fact that my mother did business with them I could

have not made deals with them,they were parasites.

"I'm sending my own negotiator and solicitor over to you Mr McClain Jnr,I think they will convince you to sell me 10% of some of your shares." Julian the greedy one said.

"Like I said before I'm not selling you my shares.I have already helped you a lot.You should be grateful." I smiled and left with the guys for lunch at this luxurious restaurant.

While waiting for our order we were discussing about business. Max was just quiet.

"And what's wrong with you?" Gareth who had joined asked.

"I'm worried about Jon. This issue about Danger taking over yesterday is worrying me. On top of that this fool wants to be in a relationship with a weak woman who won't be able to handle him" He said shaking his head.

"I understand your concerns bro but Ruth is not weak ." I defended.

"Look I really want you to be happy Jon. I really want you to be in a stable relationship but you need a strong woman for that. A one who will not break once they know about your mental condition. A one who can love the three of you combined. I mean someone who is tough to handle Danger, caring to handle Jon and soft to handle Joss. Ruth is not that girl but if you're serious about her then you can go ahead but we don't want another Katie issue." He warned.

"I really feel like she is the one. The way she carries herself you can see that she possesses all the qualities to handle me and my alter personalities. Anyway Gareth I heard Danger took control yesterday did he perhaps told you the reason he came out.?" I asked.

"You forgot? Apparently you almost ran a girl over so he took control to protect you that's what

he told me" He said.

"I almost ran someone over?How come I don't remember. I mean usually I would remember why Danger takes control what triggered it,what I wouldn't remember is what Danger would have done while in control but this time its like that part is completely erased from my memory. I don't even remember anything" I said.

"Maybe he is doing that to protect you or there is another reason" Max said.

"I suggest you start your treatment Jon before you become a complete nutcase.Or maybe you may even have amnesia.Imagine you walking around naked forgetting that you did not wear your pants, that happens with people who have amnesia right... This is definitely not your year Jon.You love a girl who doesn't want you I mean you can't fall in love before dating order is really important in life how can you wipe before going to the toilet how?" Trust Lewis to push your laughter buttons at a situation where you have to be serious.

"Just shut up Lewis if you don't have anything to say." Max was annoyed.

End of chapter4

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter5

"Why can't I stop thinking about him?".

April.

Abruptly I shook my head to dispel my thoughts and come back to the present. My tea has become cold while I was still so lost in my thoughts. Why couldn't I stop thinking about him? For crying out loud I just saw him once and I don't even know him. I sighed.

"What's wrong you didn't touch your food?" Kiara asked.

I just shook my head. "I think I'm going crazy"

Nicki bursted in laughter. "You thinking about Mr Sexy Lips"

"Who is Mr Sexy Lips?" Jenny asked.

"The one who almost ran her over yesterday" Kiara replied.

"Hello I'm still here and for the record I'm not thinking about him. I'm thinking about who could be my real father. What is he doing, where is he, is he even alive" Well I had to lie or these girls would laugh at me the whole day for thinking about someone I saw once. Luckily they bought my story. The whole night and morning I was only thinking about that guy. What was it about him, that I couldn't get my mind off him. Suddenly I felt the urge of sneaking every night and search for him. Ok that's just stupid.

"Don't worry you find out everything ok" Nicki said.

"Well excuse me I have to go see my mother, I will be back" She left.

Jenny sighed."I know you just lied to us.That look is not of someone who is worried about finding her father.That look is soft and shows a lot of emotions. A girl only looks like that when she is thinking about a guy."She sipped her tea.

"Argghh you misunderstanding me.In really thinking about this whole family issue." I defended.

"If you say so." Kiara said taking my plate and eating my food.

"Even when your mom told you the shocking news you ate that day but today you didn't even look at your food.Its written all over your face honey." Jenny continued.

"Ok I think I need to go go the gym please excuse me." I immediately stood up and left. I didn't

wanna hear whatever they had to say.

I bandaged my knuckles and started working on the punching bag. That's the only way to express my emotions. I punched till my fist became numb.

"Go easy on the punching bag" That old irritating voice belonged to Mr Jones.

I stopped and looked at him. "What do you want?" I asked.

"I came with your documents, the real ones" He gave me the documents. On my birth certificate there was no surname nor the name of the father. I also had a diploma in hotel and catering. Also my national ID and other school certificates.

"How did you get them so quick?" I asked.

"Let's just say I'm good at manipulating and twisting words so your mom didn't suspect anything."

"So you're planning to manipulate me now?" I asked.

"Noo you're way to clever. If I really wanted to manipulate you, I could have taken advantage of the fact that I saw you sneaking out yesterday. Look you're good person and I'm sorry that I had to lie about your mental condition so that you could end up here. I really needed the money for my family since the government is paying peanuts. I was desperate too, I really feel guilty each and every day when I see you suffering but trust me this time you will be out. I'm leaving this place and a new doctor whom your Mon doesn't know is coming. I will make sure that I give him/her your real medical reports. You have my word. Also sleep with your one eye open your mom wants you dead That woman can do anything for money she is evil and greedy" He said. I didn't know if I should believe him.

"Thank you Mr Jones" I forced a smile.

"You are always welcome. Don't worry you will be out of here" He smiled and left.

For some reason I believed him. He was just genuine though.

I sat down and sighed. So far life had thrown nothing but lemons to me its high time I make some lemonade.

"I hope I will be out of here soon. I need to find my father. I need to know my real identity. And maybe I can meet Mr Sexy Lips" I sighed.

I went to my cell and placed the documents under my mattress they the only things I had. Nicki came in looking rather disturbed. There is something off about her. I also guess it had

something to do with her having bipolar.

"What's wrong Nicki" I asked.

She just sobbed in my arms and I rubbed her back in comfort.

"You will be fine don't worry." I'm not good at the comforting thing but I tried.

"My mother is slowly losing it April. She is just hanging on a tiny thread. My mother is not crazy losing her son just hit her off the wrong way" She continued sobbing.

"What really happened?" Even though I knew the story I just wanted to hear it from the horse's mouth.

"Back in the 80's she really gave birth to a healthy baby boy,my brother was stolen April.People think its just the Post Traumatic Stress Disorder that she has but she can't be crazy to think that her son was alive for all these years.If it was trauma she could have gotten over it just a few months after but she says that she was the nurses taking away her baby and replacing him with a dead one.She was too exhausted to do anything. I believe her April.When I went to see her she is just hanging on a thread but there is no hope April.The fact that I promised her to find my brother for.her its the only thing that keeps her going. I'm stuck in this hopeless place what am I gonna do,I can't loose my mother and be left with that monster I call a father" Ok it seems like she also had her issues too. I wasn't the only one suffering. Seeing her mother must have did a number on her because Nicki is a jolly naturally.

"Shhh listen to me Nicki we are going to go through this together you understand me.Mr Jones is going to get me out of her.You,Jenny,Kiara and me will be out and we will find your brother as well as my father get it.Now get your self together and be strong for your mother ok" She nodded violently and wiped her tears off.

Kiara and Jenny walked in,God knows where they were.

"And what about the water works?" Jenny asked.

I narrated the whole thing to them and they also pitied Nicki.

"We all have stories to tell, it's a shame no one is willing to listen" Kiara commented. That's when it hit me. I have been so caught up in my own world, minding my own business, looking for solutions of my own problems without looking at the souls of the people I lived with. Yes I just knew them for 10 months now but I never sat down to ask them what demons they fought with. They might have been people with their mental conditions but they deserved some attention.

"I'm so sorry guys, I was so selfish. I was so caught up in my world without realising that in as much as I have my own problems people around me have much more problems as well. You have been with me through the thick and thin but I was just ignorant towards you guys. I want you, all of you to tell me your problems. I'm willing to listen." I sat down.

Kiara sighed. "Before I tell you my story. I just have a wish. Maybe one day when we are out of this place when we get our lives together. April you should be a therapist. It's just my wish."

She sighed again.

"I lost a baby. I was only eighteen. It was an unplanned pregnancy. I moved in with my boyfriend at the time. I did not know that he didn't want the baby but because I was young and stupid I thought we were at the same page. He pretended for eight months and then he totally lost it one day and poisoned me and my baby. I had to be in labour for a dead baby. He could have told me you know that he wasn't ready to take the responsibility. All because of the poison he used it damaged my womb and they had to remove it. The bitterness of losing the baby and the thought of not being able to conceive again pushed me to the edge that I was involved in domestic violence all the time. That's when I was diagnosed of bipolar. That's how I ended up

being here." She wiped her tears off.

Everyone was sniffing expect for me,I had to be strong for these girls.I was taking the role of a big sister now.

"I'm sorry you endured such a tragic loss but this is not the end of the world Kiki. There are a lot of children who are in need of a parental figure. You Kiara Chester will find a man who will love you for you and you will have your own baby. This is not the end of the world honey. I know that no amount of words will sooth your pain but you're strong more than you think ok. Jenny you are next" I said.

"I grew up in a family,a middle-class one. Not everything came in a silver platter. We had to work our butts out to earn a better living. When I was 16 my mother was diagnosed of cancer and when I was 17 she died. Mind you she was a single mother. She left me my two twin sibilings to take care of Justin and Joyce. They are 9 years old now. I didn't have a job qualification. So one day an representative of an escorting agency approached me and offered me a big deal. I had no option I had sibilings to take care of,so I gave in. It was not only to escort but we had to strip and get fucked. The money they gave me was enough to send my sibilings to school,to pay the bills and to get food on the table. So I started working for that agency. The only good thing they did for us was to ask their clients to use protection because they didn't want us to get sick. I lost my innocence to an old man than Mr Jones.,that's how disgusting it was. The work was tiring, you had to sleep with like 10 people a day,go to three escorting business dinners and strip for a minimum of five hours. My body couldn't take it so I started to use cocaine so as to keep up with my work. That's when I had schizophrenia. The bad thing about cocaine is you will be involved in crime too so as to get a fix. Hence the people who supplied for me would ask me to seduce,drug and kidnap people. The story about me kidnapping my neighbor's husband thinking it was my

lover I just made it up,he was a victim. So that's how I end up being here.I never wanted to tell anyone the truth because I was afraid of being judged.Justin and Joyce I heard they are going to be taken to a foster home from the orphanage. My prayer is that I get out of here before that happens or I would have failed them.My mother must be turning in her grave.Sometimes I wish I knew who my father was as well.""She started sobbing.

"You did what you thought was right,what you thought could bring food to the table.I will be damned if anyone dares to judge the choices you made.You're stronger than you think my dear". I said.

" Your pussy is strong my girl its not easy fucking dicks of all sizes and shapes.Ahhh hats off lil one".Well that's just Nicki for you.

"Will you tell us your story already" I said with my eyebrow raised.

From Nicki you have to expect anything like I killed somebody and hid them in the woods.

"I'm my stepfather's sex toy.No wonder I have a crazy sex drive."

We all gasped.

"After my father died mom remarried.However because of her current situation she couldn't fulfill her wifely duties so that's when I was forced to step in.That man took my innocence when I was 15.Whenever he wanted it I had to give it to him so that he could pay for my mom's hospital bills.I got angry because of this,was angry because my father had to die,angry because my mom is mentally unstable.Slowly but surely I fell into depression and then later bipolar.So this other day when he tried to take advantage of me like any other day I kicked his butt off.I didn't stop,I was easily provoked and engage in endless fights so here I am." Well she wasn't crying anymore. She narrated the story like its some fairytale. Nicki is just Nicki.

I stood up."Do you realize that there is a lot of injustice out there.I was framed and the criminal is out there freely.Kiara your ex boyfriend should be in jail but he is not,Nicki your step dad should be in prison as well.Jenny the escorting agency you worked for should be sued for employing an underage."I said.

Jenny chuckled."I don't think I can ever find justice because already I have a criminal record and a not so pleasing medical report.To top it all I can never fight against the Jackson family.Apparently Pink Agency which I worked for belongs to the Jackson brothers.Just like Jon McClain they are dangerous businessmen you don't wanna mess with.So I will just let karma deal with them".

"Excuse you!!Just because they are rich doesn't mean you don't deserve justice ok" I said.

I know I deserve justice but there is nothing I can do.I'm stuck in this hopeless place.You also want me to go against Max and Lewis that's just absurd "

"It can happen.There are not Gods Jenny" I said.

"But their Greek gods when it comes to hotness." Nicki again.

"Nicki just shut up already. April I can go against my ex. I'm in. I have to find justice for my baby that way I can find closure." Kiara said.

"Well obviously I'm in. That monster I call step dad should be in jail" Nicki said.

We all looked at Jenny. "I have to find my father and at some point I will have to mess with the McClains and Jacksons are you in for this Jenny. Once we are out of here we will deal with this together. As poor as we are and as crazy as we are" I said.

"Yea yea I'm in" She said lazily.

"Now that's my girls". We had a group hug.

End of chapter5

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter6

"Father vs son"

Yours Truly Jon,Danger and Joss.

"My goodness we are honoured ain't we?It isn't very often these days that you manage to have an amazing dinner with the famous four business tycoons who are making it in the headlines"

I tensed as I heard the sarcastic voice of my father.We never really got on particularly well after I decided to start my own business and well after he...

"I heard you were not there on the last dinner but we all know your important business was the reason right". He continued sarcastically holding a glass of whisky.

I gave him an angry look before retorting." Perhaps if you spend more time doing good in your business than fucking girls young to be your daughters and less talking in other people's lives you could be a good man right".

Without giving him any opportunity to retaliate.I turned and quickly walked away the last thing I wanted is danger taking control and beating the crap out of his crazy self.

Coming to this dinner was a bad idea but thanks to Max,Lewis and Gareth who convinced me the whole afternoon to come and face my demons well my father.

Gareth and Lewis followed me. Max was taking care of the guest.

"You do realise coming here was a bad idea right" I roared.

"You don't have to take everything he says to heart. He is just old and bitter" Gareth said softly.

"Ohh really old and bitter to fuck my fiancé right. I mean I don't understand what Katie saw in him really. My own father. You also can't tell me not to take everything he says to heart because whenever I see him the image of him on top of Katie comes back." Those were just bitter memories I never wanted to visit.

"That old man still has it. Imagine banging his son's fiancé, number one Playboy." Lewis never takes anything seriously.

I chuckled. "I just wanna leave right now but the media is all over the place. Let's just get this over

and done with."

"That's the spirit" Gareth patted my back.

Luckily I had invited Ruth over just by looking at her I calmed down. She was mingling with the other girls, throwing her head back while laughing, showing off the perfect set of teeth. I only prayed that she doesn't turn out like Katie because if that happens Danger will make sure her and my father will be six feet under.

"You're looking very cross" My mom startled me.

"Mom" I smiled and hugged her. I loved this woman. Thanks to my love for her that Danger spared her husband's life.

"How have you been my son" She asked.

Its been long since we were together in one room especially because I'm always busy and she loves travelling. Also I wasn't ready to face her husband after what he did.

We started talking did a lil catch up.Max,Lewis and Gareth also joined as we enjoyed our conversation.Out of the corner of my eye I could make sure that Ruth is still fine.

After some time we sat on the long table,exchanging smiles,having business conversations and eating.It was great expect for the fact that k was sitting opposite my father who kept on throwing daggers at me.He hated me because I killed Katie ad I hated him because he slept with my girl.

Everything was going on well until he decided to ruin it.

He stood up and asked for attention. "Well I would like to congratulate my son and his friends for getting the business deal. Congratulations son as your father I'm very proud.Now there is only one thing left it is for you to get married and give me grandchildren." He knew how sensitive the topic is to me.He sat down and smirked.

I lost it and slowly I felt Danger taking over...

Shit this old hag was getting into my nerves and I felt like shooting his fucken brains out.I stood up and went to the washroom with Max,Lewis and Gareth on my tail.

"Calm down Jon we don't want Danger taking over.He scares the shit out of me" Lewis said.

"Ohhh hello to you too Lewis" I smirked.

"Danger!!" They all exclaimed.

"Missed me already." I smiled and they jaws just dropped.

"I don't think Jon was affected that much for you to just take control" Max said.

"Only I know how he feels.Let's just get this over and done with.After this I wanna wear something nice and go to Pinks Club ..right Lewis" I said.

"Yes bro Pinks it is".We shoulder bumped and everyone stared at Lewis.

He just shrugged his shoulders.Typical Lewis.

" Please don't do anything that will ruin Jon's reputation. There are journalist all over the place."Gareth begged.

"Whatever I do,I fucken do it to protect Jon so chill" We worked out with my hands in my pocket and a silly smirk on my face.We all sat down and this lady was just staring at me.Tough she is not my type.

After like 10 mins I stood up.

"Ummm I'm sorry I can't stay here for so long,me and my friends have to go somewhere to celebrate" I said.

"Ohhh you mean going to a strip club and sleep with whores " I swear if that old hag wasn't Jon's father I would have killed him by now.

"I have inherited a lot of things from you dad but being a womanizer isn't one of them". Everyone gasped and well the journalist found a juicy topic.I don't get why they have to invite the media.Its just a fucken dinner,people will just be eating.

I Walker out and Jon's friends followed.

"What was that about?" Max asked.

"That old hag is getting into my nerves. I could have killed him already if not for the fact that he is Jon's father"

I said.

Before he responded a lady walked out. It seems she was coming our way.

"That's Ruth, the girl Jon has feelings for play nice." Gareth warned.

"I wanna see the outcome of this." Lewis said suppressing a laughter.

"Jon really doesn't have a type. What the fuck is that, the girl needs some food she is really skinny. No ass, no what... just bones making their way to us" I shook my head.

Lewis was red he wanted to laugh but he was suppressing it.

Finally she reached us and I had to play cool for Jon's sake.

"I thought you said that you were going to take me out for dinner of two after this"

What was she talking about?

"Didn't we just have dinner?" I asked.

"Seriously you're going to do this again. The following day you're going to come and beg me to go out with you but then suddenly you change your mind. You know what go and celebrate with whores and strippers. I don't even know why for a moment I thought you meant whatever you said to me. I'm done, so done... with you Jon" She turned on her heels quickly and left crying.

"What did I do?" I asked looking confused.

Lewis bursted with laughter. "Jon is going to be so angry.He had promised to take her out.You should have just played along Danger.Now you ruined everything for Jon"

"What's wrong with Jon and weak woman.She was already crying for a silly thing.You know what let's go and celebrate the Danger way" I said.

"For once I agree with you Danger.Jon likes weak woman anyway you guys can go and celebrate. I have something I must look up to" Max said.

"You need to live a little bro" Gareth said.

"Well I'm going to be a father soon,so this life I have to put it behind me" He said walking to his car.

"A father?Does he have a pregnant girlfriend or something?" I asked.

"He is adopting." Lewis said.

"Ever since Eve aborted and left him,he just wanted to have a baby and settle down.He is obsessed to have someone calling him daddy".

" Ohhh ok let's go party but I have to change this ridiculous suit that Jon wears."

We drove to my house and I changed.I wore black ripped skin jeans,white tight T-shirt,biker jacket,boots and a Rolex watch.I was good to go.I took some cash for the whores and went to the car park.

"Well the Lamborghini will do". I took the car and drove. Lewis and Gareth were in the car behind. We drove to Pinks and things were lit. The strippers doing their moves, slay queens drinking wines they can't afford with too much makeup on, some lapdancing, some sniffing drugs and the music on full blast. It was lit.

We sat down at our VVIP booth after making a grand entrance. Whores were throwing themselves on us. Strippers doing their thang.

This one girl with a thigh ass probably fake came to me. She was too fake though looking like a Barbie doll.

"Can I give you a lap dance?" She asked.

"Do your thang" I said sipping on my expensive vodka. I was having it on the rocks.

She started dancing, shaking that big ass. I was turned on, it's been long and the vodka wasn't helping.

"You know what. Let's get to one of the rooms" I said grabbing her hand.

Lewis just laughed shaking her head.

"Call me if you guys are about to leave" I said

"Cool don't forget to wear a condom,you can't trust these whores" Gareth said.

We walked to one of the rooms at the club.Since I was a VIP.I got the best one.

As soon as we entered I quickly kissed her roughly tearing her dress apart.Well I like it rough so yea.

"I don't have time for foreplay,so on your four,I'm taking you from the back." I ordered.

She nodded and took off her heels and undergarments and kneeled.

I was all ready to go in but when I was about the image of the girl I almost ran over just flashed. It felt like she was seeing me and was angry for what I was about to do.

"Fuck me already,im ready" The whore said.

I removed the condom and wore my jeans. "I don't feel like it anymore."

"What...you can't just leave me like this and what about my dress"

I took some \$100 and threw them at her.

"See what you can do". I left banging the door.What the fuck just happened?

I went back to where the others were.

" That quick?"Lewis asked in surprise.

"I don't feel like it anymore" I said drinking the vodka from the bottle but I couldn't stop thinking about her angry look.

"Whoa I never thought I would live to see this day when Danger says no to pussy". Lewis laughed.

" You guys celebrate or get laid.I will wait and we will leave"I said.

"We don't wanna stay here for long we are going to leave after getting laid" Gareth said.They stood up followed by 4 girls.

I sat there drinking and rejecting whores who were throwing themselves at me.After an hour Gareth and Lewis came back.

"We asked the chauffeur to take back the car.You're driving us Danger cool."

I nodded and we walked out of the booth.

On our way out some nigger bumped into me spilling my shirt with cheap alcohol.

"The fuck!!" He said.

"Danger let's just go" Lewis said because was about to go down.

"Apologize." I said the to nigger who was giving me attitude.

"I hate repeating myself". Before he replied I was punching the living daylights out of him. I could hear people taking pictures. Finally Gareth and Lewis managed to pull me off him.

We walked out with Gareth shouting at me." Do you realise that you're putting Jon's reputation on the line here. What the fuck were you thinking? Couldn't you just let it be for once"

"I don't care about Jon's reputation people will just have to respect and fear him not walk all over him all the time. That nigger is lucky I forgot my gun, I could have shoot his brains out."

I walked to the car and went in.

"Inasmuch as you claim that you do everything for Jon's sake do you realize Danger that at some point you will ruin everything for him and he will have to clean your mess" Gareth said.

"Is it because you didn't get some today. I mean we know your nature you like fighting but today you were all ratchet." Lewi said sipping on his vodka.

"Talking about not getting some, why didn't you get laid today?" Gareth said taking the vodka from Lewis and sipping as well

"It's all because of her." I said clenching my jaws.

"Her!! Who?" They asked in unison.

"The girl I almost ran over" I said focusing my eyes on the road.

"What did she do? Was she at the club?" Lewis asked.

"Noo man. When I was about to fuck that whore I just saw her angry face and I couldn't bring myself to do it... Fuck you don't you know how to drive" I cursed at the driver who just overtook in a dangerous manner.

"Why did you think about her?" Gareth asked.

"Ask no questions, hear no lies." I said firmly. They just exchanged looks and kept quiet.

When we arrived I was super tired.I just went straight to sleep.

The following morning I woke up with a banging headache. Danger must have had a lot to drink yesterday. I walked downstairs to the kitchen and found Max drinking coffee,sitting leg crossed and holding a tablet. Sometimes he acts like my father.

"Come sit down." He said with a firm voice.

Told yaa he acts like my father.I sat down anyway.He threw his tablet luckily I caught it.

I looked at what he was showing me.It was a video of me well Danger punching this guy ruthlessly.

"Man you know that's not me". I remember Danger taking over after my father's nasty remarks.

" The people outside doesn't know about that.To them Jon McClain was acting all ratchet in a strip club...stooping so low for a business tycoon.Did you read the comments, they all nasty and we have to do a damage control. You will have to hold a press conference and clean this mess.For some reason I feel like you no longer want to get treated Jon.You are used to living with your alter personalities for 9 years now but do you realizes how messy this causes.Also Danger messed up things with Ruth yesterday and she had enough. If you don't see a psychologist now you will die a lonely man."He stood up.

"See you later bro"

He walked out.

He was right I was now reluctant about seeing a shrink.It was high time I get treated.

End of chapter6

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter 7

"It was nice seeing you again".

April.

Life at the asylum so far was great. Its been a month. For the whole month I never got electrocuted. Me and my sisterfriends (Nicki, Kiara and Jenny) had started my own sessions more like discussions with patients at the asylum. We discussed about the demons they battle with, the problems they faced and so forth. Some stories were just a pity, some were complete disasters and some were funny. I got to meet people with different personalities and different mental problems. Some had post traumatic stress disorder, Stockholm syndrome, obsessive compulsive disorder, bipolar, schizophrenia and there were two patients with multiple personalities. That was interesting.

Also Mr Jones kept his word he submitted my real medical reports to the new psychologist Mrs Gomez. They were still processing my release papers but I was still scared if maybe the law is against me being released before I fulfill the sentence. Henceforth my plea was sent to the court and I was just hoping it turns out well.

"Wake up guys we need to clean the cell before going to the discussion" I shook them one by one.

Since the last time they confided in me about what they went through I have been taking serious care of them making sure they take their pills and do not fight. I must say for the whole month non of them had an attack so it has been great.

Anyway they quickly woke up and started doing their chores. A nurse came to our cell.

"April, Doctor Gomez summons you" She said.

The whole month they were handling the patients with extra care because Doctor Gomez was strict and she loved her job. Treating nut cases was her passion.

"Ok let me freshen up I'm coming" I said.

"Make it quick she has very important visitors to attend." She said.

I quickly tied my long hair and brushed my teeth. My overall was clean. I followed the nurse to the doctor's office.

We knocked and she summoned us with her sweet voice.

I entered and I was damn nervous.

"Please take a sit April and nurse thank you, you may leave."

"How are you doing my dear" She asked.

"I'm doing just fine but I'm nervous" I said honestly.

"Well there is nothing to be nervous about. I have got good news for you. Your appeal was granted. Well because you spend five years here at a mental asylum jail while you are mentally stable they said it would be fair if you will be released this year. But you will be on probation for a year." She smiled.

I was happy so happy. I stood up and paced around the room.

"Ohhh My God are you serious!" I exclaimed.

"Yes my dear. Make sure when you are released you stay faraway from crime" She said firmly.

"You have to believe me Doctor I did nothing wrong I was framed." I sat down

"I believe you. I have a nephew who is a lawyer when he was watching your case he could tell you're innocent because there were many loose ends. Firstly you couldn't have poisoned your mother while your brother and father were around. Also you had a good relationship so there was absolutely no reason to poison her. So I believe you. Here is my business card, once you're out of here call me. After seeing you doing your sessions with the other patients I realised that you're actually a good person and you have a potential of being a good therapist. So please call me once you are out of here" She said giving me her card.

"Thank you so much Doc you don't know how much this means to me. I'm so glad that you also believe my side of the story. I'm so grateful Doc, may God richly bless you, you don't know how much this means to me." I said with all my heart.

"Ok ok you can spend all day here praising me but isn't this the time to attend one of your sessions. Most of the time I secretly watch you doing your thing but today I have important visitors so I can't come." She said going through her files.

"Ohhh you are right I have to go for my sessions now. Once again thank you so much." I said leaving.

I was so excited that when I opened the door I just bumped into a rock like chest and fell with my butt. While I was nursing my ass a deep masculine voice startled me.

"Are you ok.?"

I lifted my head.

Ohhh you gotta be fuckin kidding me.

"Um..a-ahh umm...sorry...I mean ...I'm fine" What the hell happened to my voice.I tried to stand up but well my legs failed me,they had become wobbly all of a sudden.

"Hey take it easy." He said helping me to stand up.

Finally I was on my feet facing Mr Sexy Lips.

I closely examined him.

His dark designed suit emphasized the masculine power of his broad shoulders.Beneath the crispness of his shirt I could see his rockhard chest rising and falling as he breathed.

"Earth to you girl.. I know I'm good looking but it's rude to stare". The attitude stinks.

The other guy he was with chuckled and shook his head.

I looked at the eyes that almost pierced me the day on the main road.They weren't icy grey anymore but seablue.Did he wear contact lenses?

They way we looked t each other that day,he usually should remember me right?.I was asking myself those questions while he looked at me with confusion written all over his face.

" Did you not hear what I said.Let go of me" He said removing my hands which were tightly holding his arms.

"Ohhh I'm sorry." Jesus what had gotten into me. I quickly ran out of the room. Only when I was far away from the Doc's office that's when I realised I was holding on to a breath.

Anyway I walked to the garden near the car park where we were having our session that day. Everyone had already gathered. I was the only one left and Nicki had taken over busy cracking jokes.

"Hellooo" I waved taking my seat and they replied.

"What took you so long?" Jenny asked.

Girl I met Mr Sexy Lips today. My inner whore screamed.

"We were discussing something with Doc." I replied.

"Ohhh ok". Jenny said.

After Nicki was done cracking the jokes it was my turn to give an opening speech. So I stood up and everyone went silent.

"In life we often need love to stay the course. There are so many pitfalls, low points and dark days in our lives when we desperately need a voice that stirs our spirit and gives us the oomph to carry on. We are all here today because God has his reasons. There might isolate you because you have OCD, Stockholm Syndrome, Bipolar or DID but just know that God the giver of life has a reason why you had to encounter such, sometimes is to test you and sometimes is to strengthen you..." I saw that their attention had shifted to the car park so I turned to see what it was.

Well it was Mr Sexy Lips and that guy he was with they were looking at our direction.

"That's the guy who almost ran me over" I whispered to Nicki.

"Ohhh my God you mean thee Jon McClain almost ran you over." She said with her eyes popped out.

"You mean to say to me that he is Jon McClain.." I was shocked.

"Yes of course,thee sex Greek God,no wonder you always fantasized about him." She said.

The little crush I had on him was replaced by anger.Well not necessarily anger but it wasn't a friendly feeling. This Jon McClain definitely was working with my mother so there was no way I could be on his side.At some point I was going to have to go against.Besides he was probably engaged or had a girlfriend with a model kinda body and also a clean background.I know its absurd but I had hopes that maybe,you know maybe something would spark.

I sighed and continued with my speech

After our session we went for lunch.

"So what did the doctor said are you getting released.?" Kiara asked

"I'm getting released with you guys.I will be on probation for one year." I said and they started screaming in happiness.

"Once we are out we are going to paint Georgia red.!" Nicki exclaimed.

"Well I'm happy for you.So do you maybe know the reason why Jon McClain was here?" Kiara asked.

Before getting a chance to reply Nicki has already interrupted.

"And he is the sane guy who almost ran her over that other day" You could hear the excitement in her voice.

"For real" Jenny and Kiara said in unison.

"Yes but I didn't know that he is thee Jon,you always talked about."I said lazily.

" So why are you sulking "Kiara asked.

"Umm its nothing I can't handle. Let's go and eat"

I changed the subject.

Luckily they decider not to dwell on it.

"So what's gonna happen once you out of here" Jenny asked.

"I will have to make sure I work near the McClains first to fish out for information about all the deals they made with The June family. Only that way I might find who my father is.Maybe my father is the one behind all the riches.Maybe Julian slept with a married man and in return he gave them money to keep her mouth shut.Man I don't know this whole thing is taking a tore on me." I said dryly.

"Its ok honey you don't have to stress about it ok.We are here for you" Kiara said rubbing my back.

"I hate being the spotlight guys. You all have your own problems and I should also be there for you. I'm older than you I should do the comforting." I said.

"You're human April. You may be tough and all but at some point you breakdown. Ever since I came here I have never seen you crying but that doesn't mean you don't have emotions. It's not healthy for you to bottle things up and put everything under the carpet." Nicki said.

"For once Nicki said something that makes sense" I laughed.

"What are you guys going to do once you are out of here?" I tried to change the topic.

"Eish I'm clueless sis. I don't even know where to start" Jenny said.

"Ummm Doc gave me her card and said I should call her once I'm out of here. I think its a good idea that we stay together what do you think?" I asked.

"I think its a good idea too. I mean its a good thing that we stay together. Its easier" Kiara agreed.

"Im in guys. I would like to stay with someone like you April." Nicki said

"April you're the only one who can put us under the leash." Jenny said.

So we decided to stay together and fight our own battles together.

"What's wrong with you Jon?"

"Ok out with it Jon what's wrong? Look I know that the decision of seeing a shrink after a long time its not gonna be easy but there is no other choice here." Max said while we were coming from the asylum.

I sighed because that wasn't bothering me, she was. That patient I bumped into at the asylum.

"That girl I bumped into at the asylum she looks familiar. I feel like I have seen her somewhere"

He gave me an old-fashioned look. "You're thinking about that patient? "

"Yes. Do you know that feeling.. I mean when it feels like you know someone but you don't remember. I'm feeling like that right now. When she looked at me I had some blur images of someone with that same look she gave me." I roughly rubbed my head.

"Do you think maybe Danger or Joss know her?" He asked rather looking concerned.

"Noo its impossible because memories from my alter personalities is kept away from me because literally they are not my memories." I explained

"Well there might be a possibility that maybe Danger or Joss is allowing you to see their memories. If not then explain to me why you feel like you have seen that girl from somewhere."

"Max you're making sense yes but the reason why my alter personalities were created is for me to forget. I don't remember anything that happened quarter of my life so there is no way I can remember what happened with Danger or Joss. It can't start now, it's just a crazy feeling otherwise maybe Danger and Joss don't even know the girl." I sighed.

"So why are you bothered because you were awfully quiet?" He raised his eyebrow

"Man I was just worried ok. Another I don't understand how a patient plays shrink to other patients. Did you see the way she was lecturing other patients. Anyway that doesn't matter I don't know what to wear today I'm going to see Ruth today"

"I don't see why you bother with that girl. I don't think she can handle the fact that you got multiple personalities." He parked since we had arrived home.

"She can handle it trust me. Anyway how is the adoption process.?" I asked.

"Well its taking long because I'm not adoption babies they are kids who understand things now. So I have to get to know them so that they won't feel out of place once I take them home." He explained.

"How many are you adopting?" I asked.

"2 they are twins. I can't separate them. Twins need each other, I know that very well. Anyway I have to leave. Please call Miss Gomez after this, she is a good psychologist and I have a feeling that everything will work out for you."

"Cool my guy. I will do so. I'm just worried though will she be able to keep my secret. I mean if it goes out that I have D.I.D my dad will use that to his advantage." I was worried

"You do have to worry about that. What goes between the patient and the Doctor is confidential and if anything comes out then you will sue her. Besides she knows better than to mess with us. Let me go ok. If you need company just call Lewis." He patted my shoulder and left.

I went in and poured myself some juice and drank.

After that I took a quick shower and wore sweatpants and a loose T-shirt.

I took my Bentley keys and drove to Ruth's place. She was not taking my calls or coming to work. Dramatic if you ask me.

I arrived and rang the bell.

After some minutes she opened the door.

She was about to close it but I was quick to block it.

"You're being immature right now Ruth" I said with a firm voice.

"What are you doing here Jon" She said folding her arms.

"I'm here to explain myself. May I come in?" I asked.

She led me to a cozy couch. Her apartment wasn't bad it was cozy and warm.

"Your apartment is good. I wouldn't mind spending the whole day in here." I said smiling just to ease the tension.

"Thank you." She said softly.

"Can you please come and sit here beside me." I said

"No I'm fine here".

"Cool then. Look Ruth I'm too grown for this hide and seek game you're playing here. I get tired of the chase too. The reason why I'm here also is to apologize for not living up to my word at dinner celebration. I'm sorry for that. I have no excuse to justify my actions but Ruth people can get to know each other without necessarily having to go out to a fancy dinner. However if that's what you want we can go on a date right now. I just want to know Ruth do you wanna be officially mine or you just wanna play games. I have made my intentions known to you and if it's not me that you want in your life I will just leave, I will just stop chasing after you like some teenage boy. Please make up your mind so that I can know where I stand in your life. That's all I wanted to say. If you have made up your mind then you know where to find me, I will be waiting but I have been patient for too long." I stood up and walked to the door.

"Wait Jon, don't go." She came to where I was standing.

End of chapter 7

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter8

"Freedom is coming.. *tomorrow"*

April.

"Ohhh my God im so excited no more electrical shocks,no more bitter pills,no more orange overalls,no more straitjackets,no more disgusting meals....finally my freedom....finally tomorrow I will be out.. Gosh I'm so excited...." I did the nae nae dance.

"Ok we have heard that for as long as I remember save that energy for tomorrow. I have never seen you this excited." Jenny said shaking her head.

"You don't know how much this means my friend.I have been here for five years.I endured a lot and its really a miracle that I will go out in one piece.I don't wish anyone else to be in my place.I'm so excited.!" I exclaimed.

It was my freedom's day eve I wasn't even sleepy.I was excited.I had a lot of things planned out but first I had to put my life in order.Thanks to Doctor Gomez we found a cheap flat in downtown to rent in. It wasn't fancy like she said but it was ok to live in.As for the job we were going to hustle as girls.

The girls too were so excited about their freedom.As for their mental conditions they were doing just fine, thanks to.effective medicine that was given to them by Mrs Gomez.She was really an angel.While we were celebrating there was a knock. Odd if you ask me.They usually open the cells without knocking.

"Talking about perfect timing." I said sarcastically

"Come in" Kiara shouted

Two female nurses came in.

"The doctor is calling you" One of them said.

"At this hour its almost past midnight." Nicki asked.

"Its ok Nicki maybe she has something important to tell me.Let's go" I stood up.

"But April.." Jenny said.

I interrupted. "I will be fine Jenny don't worry guys.I will be back soon ok." I left with the two nurses.

When we were walking down the passage one of the nurses from nowhere took out a knife and stabbed me.This had Julian June written all over it.That witch!

I managed to scream Nicki's name with the little power I had.I passed out.

Beep!Beep!Beep!

Ok that beeping sound was irritating. I managed to open my eyes and the first thing I saw was the white walls and the lights.Ok i was in hospita.I turned my almost numb neck and also realized that I had a lot of drips connected to my body.My lower side was in serious pain.Then I remembered I was stabbed.I was too weak to shout but thankfully the doctor came in.The one that I didn't know.

He started checking a lot of things while.writing down on his file.My throat was sore that I couldn't utter a word.

I looked at him and at the glass of water.Thankfully he may had studied sign language he helped me to drink the water.

He looked at me for a while.

"How many fingers are these.?"

Its probably old age how could he ask me such a silly question.

"F-i-v-e..."I managed to say.

He smiled again." I will inform your sisters that you're awake."

I just nodded and he walked out.

After some minutes the whole team was in my room.Don't they have a rule of having just two people or something?I asked myself while looking at my girls who were bombing me with endless questions.

"I'm ...fine " I managed to say.They didn't hear me though because I no longer had the spotlight. Nicki had.

She was pacing up and down."Man I had already saved up some money for a casket.I was definitely going to make sure you get a decent burial."

Can you believe it.She stole the spotlight just to say how much she was planning my burial.

Typical Nicki I tell you.

Jenny smacked the back of her head."Are you crazy!Did you want her to die?"

She sat down."Obviously no.She means so much to me and vice versa.She called my name first.I was just prepared for anything."

"You scared us April.The blood ..ohh my God..I still can't get that image out of my head.What happened.. Why did the nurses stab you?" Kiara asked

"I'm pretty sure that it had everything to do with Julian.After she heard I was going to get released. She sent those people.Anyway how did I get here.What day is it today.How long was I

out?"

"Doctor Gomez was the one who drove you here. She paid for everything as well. She is an angel that one. You were out for two weeks. So you can't really blame me for saving up money of your burial." Nicki explained.

"Wow I was out for two weeks. That definitely means the stab was supposed to kill me." I shook my head

"You lost too much blood honey. On top of that your blood type was rare in the blood bank but thankfully you got an anonymous doner." Jenny said.

"Anonymous doner? Ahhh I don't wanna stress it. I just hope I will be out soon. How is the apartment." I asked

"Whoa its quite fancy for our class.It has three bedrooms with in suits,a kitchen, lounge,a patio and swimming pool.On top of that it has an amazing ocean view.Its fancy but according to Doc Gomez its not.On that note it has some of her second hand furniture." Kiara said.

"So how did you survive you guys for the past few days?" I was dead worried

"I had some money.Also Doc bought us some groceries which will last for two months.We are covered but we will have to hustle,we can't keep on relying on her for everything." Kiara said firmly.

"You're right I just need to get out of here so we can hustle together." I sighed feeling the pain from the stab.

We talked for a long time until they decided to leave.Well after feeding the living daylight out of me.

My wound wasn't too deep so I was discharged the following day.I was given the medication to

dress the wound properly.

Doctor Gomez came and picked me up and I couldn't stop thanking her. She was just kind.

"We are home" She said parking her car next to a nice apartment.

"Wow this is where we live. This is so nice" I admired.

"Well it's a lil something." She said walking to the door.

"Doctor its everything for us." We walked in and well I expected the house to look like a haunted house. You can't trust Nicki because she is a slob, you have to clean after her but to my surprise it was super clean. Everything in there was simple, average and cozy.

"Girls!" Doc shouted and well they ran downstairs like little kids running for candy.They all gave me a bone crushing hug making me wince a little.

We finally sat down and took turns in thanking Doctor Gomez.

"Ohhh my girls you really don't have to thank me.Maybe one day you will help me out too.Anyway I will see if I can get you guys jobs ok.However with your backgrounds I can't get you anything fancier than cleaning."She said.

" Anything is ok.As long as it's legit.Cleaning is not really tough though we can manage.Thank you so much Doc you really are God sent."I said.

"You are welcome.Anyway let me not waste much time. I need to hurry back and check on my patients.Call me if you need anything." She took her car keys and left.

The girls showed me around. Well as the eldest I got my own room. The money that Nicki had she bought clothes for all of us. It wasn't anything luxurious but it was worthy.

At night the girls started arguing about who was going to cook.

I knew this was going to happen especially when you live with Chuck Norris's grandkids.

"I spent the whole day cooking." Nicki said folding her arms.

"Ohhh by cooking you refer to making us tea which was tasteless on top of that" Kiara said.

"Well at least I went near the pots." Nicki defended.

"I cooked yesterday." Jenny shouted.

" Ohhh don't be too proud. Your chicken looked like it was doing some kungfu...or it was going to a surgical operation swimming in onions and tomatoes. It was disgusting. Mathematically it was 200% times +10 total failure "Kiara shouted.

" You don't even know math" Jenny defended.

"Ok enough the three of you. I will cook" I finally intervened because they could argue all night with empty stomachs.

"But you just came out of the hospital." Kiara said with some concern.

"I will manage.Its not the hand that was stabbed." I said.

"That's why I love you." Nicki kissed my cheek and ran to the lounge.They all followed.

Wait a minute were they really concerned about the fact that I had wound.Well probably not.

I started defrosting the meat and steaming som veggies.

They started arguing again over a channel or something. I'm not even bothered anymore,that's their kind of love.Intervening will not help.I cooked and dished for all of them.

They were still arguing God knows about what.

"Nicki,Kiki and Jenny". The sharp note in my voice was so clear.

They stood up and followed me to the kitchen.I handed each of them their plates or they would argue about that too.

We started eating and talking.

"We finally got the freedom we wanted.What now.We have a lot of unresolved issues?" Kiara asked from nowhere.

I sighed."I don't wanna think about that right now.First I have to heal.I also have to be careful.I'm out here so they are chances that I might be attacked again,I'm no longer protected by the walls of the asylum.I just have to put my life in the right track before interfering with the McClains."

"You're right about that" Kiara supported.

Two weeks later.

I rang the bell again.

"Who is it?" A young voice asked.

"Piazza delivery." I answered.

I heard footsteps of someone running. A young boy opened the door.

"Italian?" He said with questioning eyes

"Yes little sir" I said smiling. He handed me five bucks and muttered thank you before closing the door.

Phew thank God that was the last delivery of the day I was so damn tired. I took the bicycle that I used and cycled back to Italia the restaurant me and my girls worked in. Well we hustled it wasn't easy and luckily the old man who owns Italia hired the four of us despite the bad background. He said he didn't mind he only wanted people who work hard and we promised to. Nicki ran errands for Mr Cedric the owner whom we refer to as uncle white because of his white hair, that's how old he is. Kiara worked on the counter, Jenny was in to cleaning and I delivered the meals for the people who order online. Sometimes I would use the restaurant's old van or a bicycle to deliver the food.

Anyway I drove back to work and went to inform the manager that I was done for the day. She was an elderly lady.

"I'm done for the day Mrs Cedric". I said giving her the money.

"Ohhh thank you so much.Umm dear the one who is supposed to take over from you hasn't arrived yet of which we got one last order to deliver.We will loose customers if we make them wait.Please take the van and deliver the piazza they want I'm sure you are tired of cycling." She said.

I couldn't say no to her despite the fact that I was dog tired.Already they had done us a big favour by giving me and my girls jobs.To top that we got free meals and some allowance.She gave me the car keys and the address. I passed by the counter getting some juice.

"And now where are you going" Kiara asked

"I have a delivery to make in the first street." I said.

"Who orders from there?People who live there only eat from hotels" She said wiping the counter.

"I don't know. Let me bounce my guy, I'm already late."

Yours truly *Jon(Danger,Joss)*

"I'm famished when will order come." Gareth complained.

"You trusted Lewis and allowed him to order from a cheap restaurant in downtown." Max said while typing something on his phone.

"Patients gentlemen.I always order from that cheap restaurant and trust me the pizzas there are delicious.You will also be saving money." Lewis defended.

"I don't know why today they are late."

"I will sue that restaurant,I swear.I'm hungry" I complained too.

Well its not like there was no food in the house but it's only that none of us had an idea about cooking and all my chefs were on an off.

"But you got a girl now,she should be here cooking for us" Gareth said.

"You're right she is my girl not your personal chefs" I said.

"But here you are hungry and not to forget horny." Max said with a sarcastic voice.

"Who said I'm horny?" I asked.

"Hungry men are horny man" Typical Lewis.

"Ahhh whatever and its not Ruth's job to cook for me anyway.I know you don't like her so you will do anything to paint her bad." I defended.

"You're right we don't like her for you and we are not even going to hide it.She is not good enough for you.She is a good person we admit but not for you my guy." Lewis never opposed any girl I dated this was a first.

"I might have always ignored your issues with girls but after Katie I can't take the risk anymore.For the first time I think Max is right about not liking Ruth"

He continued.

"So you're saying no one is good for me right. Is it my fault that I have Dissociative Identity Disorder. I never asked for it. So who should I be with me, no one should date a mentally unstable guy like me right." I was emotional already

"You took it the wrong way Jon. Lewis didn't mean like that. He meant to say that Ruth is not good enough for you." Gareth tried to explain.

"Don't get emotional over this Jon. You have been doing quite well with your personalities. They haven't been taking control and they can't start now. Don't get emotional bro" Max said.

I shouted. "Let's not sugarcoat the truth here. No one is good for me and I'm supposed to die a lonely man because I'm mentally unstable "

I started panting. Slowly I started falling asleep leaving Danger to take control over my body.

Danger.

Its been long since I.was out and I must say I missed some whisky. I looked at Jon's friends who were starring at me like they have seen a ghosts.

"Jon are you ok?" Gareth asked. I rolled my eyes

"That's not Jon,that's Danger.Wassup nigger" Now that was Lewis.

I just shook my head and walked to the wine cellar.

"Don't touch my whisky" Max warned.

"Why do you keep it in Jon's wine cellar then" I said rudely.

Anyway I went and poured myself his whisky and sat down.

After a couple of minutes someone rang the bell.

"Expecting someone?" I asked.

"Ohhh its about time,I was damn hungry.I almost died" Lewis said walking to the door.I guess it was food delivery or something.

"What took you so long?" Lewis asked whoever was on the door.

"Well I thought I got the wrong address and besides I wasn't supposed to come here my shift had already ended."

I literally choked on the whiskey. I have never heard such a beautiful voice in my entire messed up life.

I wanted to see who it was but Max and Gareth had already thrown daggers at me after I literally choked so I decided not to go and see.

"Ohh ok how much is it anyway?" Lewis asked.

"Didn't you check when you ordered? Anyway it's \$25" You could tell she is feisty because she sounded rather annoyed.

I chuckled.

Max gave me the look again.

"Thank you". She said and Lewis closed the door.

We started feasting on the piazza. Everyone was too busy eating when someone rang again.

Lewis sighed in frustration and walked to the door.

He just opened and started to walk back to get a piece.

" You gave me extra money here" That voice again made my heart pound.

"You could have just used it" Lewis said.

"Well you mistakenly gave it to me so I couldn't do that. Here is your \$5"

This time I couldn't stop myself I turned curiously to see who it was. Well it was none other than the girl I almost ran over the other day.

It was plain from her expression that she had recognized me too. I immediately stood up and walked towards her. Max, Lewis and Gareth were looking confused.

This time she looked different. She looked rather thick this time. Her hair was tied in a tight ponytail with no makeup on her face. She was wearing a black skinny jean which showed her full curves. She was wearing a red golf T-shirt printed Italia on the front, from the look of it you could see she had big boobs.

Anyway we exchanged cold looks.

She folded her arms. "Are we in a starrng contest now?"

"What the hell are you doing in my house. You almost caused me trouble on the main road the other day, now you in my house. Are you stalking me young lady?" I said with a firm voice.

"You guys know each other" Gareth asked. We both ignored him.

She chuckled and rolled her eyes. Then walked towards me.

"Get off your high horse Mr Se---...when I met you at the mental asylum I didn't ask you such a ridiculous question. By the way who drives in a dangerous speed like that." She said with attitude.

"At the asylum?" It clicked so Jon met her.

"Anyway what the hell are you doing here"

"Am I supposed to answer such a rhetorical stupid question." She rolled her eyes and Lewis started laughing.

"It seems someone met their match today" Gareth said. I gave him a warning.

"Well leave right now" I said with a firm voice and she didn't seem scared or anything.

"I wasn't planning to stay anyway. By the way there is no need to shout you don't scare me and trust me I can shout too" She rolled her eyes.

"Excuse me what did you just fucken say to me" I wore a cold look that even Max is scared of.

" Did I fucken stutter.."She said looking serious. I kept quiet not knowing what to say next because no one has ever challenged me like this and a woman on top of that.

"Thought as much. Anyway thank you for ordering at Italia please order next time."

She catwalked and turned giving me one last death stare. She opened the door and left.

I was still in the same position trying to digest if it was really true that I was challenged by a woman.

"Wow I bet that one is feisty even in bed...I can imagine her commanding whilst--" He didn't finish his statement.

"Lewis don't you fucken dare even fantasize about her" I warned.

"Hey relax man"Max said.

" Explain to me.When and how Jon met her?"I sat down.

"They met accidentally at the asylum." Max said.

"At the asylum? What was he doing there?" I asked

"Jon needs to get treated Danger." He said.

"I don't care about that. But when Jon comes back tell him that I said he should stay the fuck away from that girl. I repeat he should stay away or we will have problems. Serious problems"

They exchanged looks.

I drank the whisky in one go. I don't know what I was feeling because I never like this before, it was a new and foreign feeling.

End of chapter8

Please guys let's comment so that I know what you guys are thinking about the story.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter9

April.

"Stuck in my mind"

"Young lady are you stalking me....mxm that son of a biscuit who the hell does he think he is.Me stalking him huh..how crazy can he be...that's just ridiculous.One minute he acts like he doesn't know he almost ran me over and one minute he accuses me for almost causing him problems...does he think he is Obama's son in law.." I soliloquized all the way from Jon's house. Other drivers were hooting at me because I would at times stop while absent minded.Thank God the traffic police didn't notice.

I arrived at the restaurant and parked.I gave Mrs Cedric the keys.The girls were waiting for me because it was time to knockoff.

"What took you so long" Jenny asked giving me a bone crushing hug.

"We were so worried about you. We thought maybe Julian did something. I was about to start saving money for burial." Nicki said and we all gave her the look.

She shrugged.

"Whaat I was just worried"

"And the burial is the first thing you think about" Jenny laughed shaking her head.

"Well my last delivery was at Jon McClain's house." I said dryly.

"Say what!!" Kiara said with her eyes popped out.

"Did you suck his dick" Nicki said.

"Ewww seriously" Jenny said.

"Noo of course...ewww" I said looking disgusted.

"So there is nothing to be shocked about and anyway stop putting that disgusting face on you fantasied about that guy at some point." Thats Nicki for you.

"So what happened please feed us the details" Kiara was so impatient.

"Let's go home first"

They all sulked. The way they loved news these three.

Anyway we went home and we sat in the lounge. No one was cooking because we had brought some pizza from Italia.

"So what happened" Jenny said.

"Well I have never been to first street before so when I saw where the address was leading me--"
Nicki interrupted before I could finish

"We don't care about the address just go to the part where you met Jon" She said looking impatient.

"Let her speak or the story will not make sense" Jenny said.

I shook my head" So as I was saying I thought I was given the wrong dress when I arrived at his street. I was battling to go in but then I decided to just go. I rang the bell and was answered by yet another yummy looking guy. He paid and then closed the door. I was about to leave when I realized that he gave me extra money so I went back and he invited me in. Only then when I was inside that the icy blonde guy who was sitting on a couch turned and it was none other than Mr Sexy Lips.

We exchanged cold looks and words of course. But there is something bothering me though" They looked at me waiting for me to continue.

"Well there is something about Jon I can't put my finger on"

"Will you tell us what it is already" Kiara said.

"Look when I first had an encounter with him on the main road, when he almost ran me over he

gave me this angry look. I can't explain the look but it sent cold chills down my spine, it made my heart pound. Then when I met him at the asylum he didn't have that look anymore, it's like he was someone else he was just cool, that look made my knees wobbly but didn't send chills down my spine. Then today he had that look again the one which send chills down my spine. That look scares me and the way he clenches his jaws even anyone can pee on themselves but I don't know why something in me says I should provoke him. I know maybe I'm not making sense but whenever I see him I feel like I'm seeing a new person". I said and they gave me the looks.

" You're right whatever you said doesn't make sense." Jenny said

"Yea to you guys it doesn't make sense I know".

I know it may sound crazy but I was super worried for some reason.

"There is something going on in his life"

I said.

"Whoa whoa whoa hold it right there Miss Curious, there is a lot happening in your life already. Your mother is out there trying to end you, you don't know who your father is, you were framed, you got a criminal record which at some point you need to clear on top of that you're

financially unstable. There is a lot going on in your life April and the last thing you should worry about is what's going on in Jon's life. That guy got his shit together. He lives a life, expensive houses, cars, whisky and even girlfriends. To top that he got a family that supports him. I don't even know why you are so worried about him. Probably he has forgotten that you even exist April" Jenny said with a serious tone.

"I second you on that Jenny. Don't forget that this guy may be involved with illegal business deals with your mother." Kiara said.

"But guys.." I tried to defend.

"No April that's enough. What's happening with you. Where is the determination to find your father, to know who you are, where is that craving for justice. Stop being an emotional wreck over someone whose life is perfect and doesn't even care about you" Nicki supported.

If Nicki says something that makes sense, then it means the issue is important.

" You're right I'm loosing focus over shit.He is nothing in my life,I shouldn't be worried about his shit of a life.That son of a biscuit".

When I said that I felt my heart reprimanding me,my conscience folded their arms and my brain sat leg crossed lowered its specs and gave me a warning look.

Everyone else was also giving me the look.Well maybe I shouldn't have said that about him

"He is no longer Mr Sexy Lips now." Jenny said with an eyebrow raised.

"And isn't it supposed to be said like son of a bitch not biscuit" Nicki clapped her hands and laughed.

"I have never seen you like this April,this is new" Kiara shook her head.

"Anyway for the sake of progress, April you need to come up with a plan on how to get

information about your mothers deals with the McClains.What I'm trying to imply is,its high time you come up with a plan to deal with the McClains especially Jon" Jenny said.

"But I need to get my life together before messing up with them" I said.

"You're dragging this dear,we all know your life will get together when you know your identity. Right now its in bits and pieces and can never get together" Kiara said.

"We are not being hard on you sis,we want the best for you and besides you're our pillar.We just think its high time to tackle this identity thing" Nicki supported.

I sighed."You're right I have been dragging this for too long.I will sleep over it and think of a good plan."

They all nodded.

At night I couldn't sleep. I felt the walls of my room curving in. I kept on tossing and turning. I felt suffocated, pressured and burdened. I tried so much not to worry about Jon but my mind kept on going back to him. I tried to tell myself many reasons why I shouldn't worry about him but still he was stuck in my mind.

I woke up and made myself coffee then went to the patio.

"A lot of people out there pretend as if they get their life together while there are suffering. What if the same is happening with Jon? Maybe I'm being nosy but I trust my gut feeling" I soliloquized.

Jon

"Missed me ?"

When I woke up in the morning I had a mother of all hangovers. Well Danger must have had a lot to drink then. I did my hygiene and walked downstairs. Lewis was sleeping on the couch looking like he was running or something. Popcons and two boxes of pizza were all over the place. I shook my head and went to the kitchen. I found Max holding his cup of coffee with one hand in his pocket staring into the space. He wasn't wearing a suit though. On the kitchen counter there was the slimy green substance. I frowned.

"I called the cleaners to clean that mess." He said looking at the lounge. Did I mention he is a clean freak.

"Sit down". He commanded.

I sighed, sat down and drank the concoction without waiting to be told so. Now what did Danger do. I wondered.

"What did Danger do yesterday? Do I have to do a damage control?" I asked.

"No he didn't do anything. Something else happened" He said maintaining his serious look.

"Ohhh have you already told him that we met the girl he almost ran over" I don't even know when Lewis woke up. His hair was a mess and it was clear he hadn't washed his face. He walked to the fridge, opened it and took a bottle from it and drank from it.

"You didn't even brush your teeth. Couldn't you pour the milk in the cup" Max said in annoyance.

"It's a long process" He continued drinking the milk.

"Are you already talking about the iron lady without me" Gareth walked in and went to the fridge, took out some ice cream and sat down.

"Ok what are you guys talking about?" I asked looking confused.

"We met Danger's match yesterday. It was exciting" Gareth said enjoying his ice cream,early in the morning.

"Can somebody explain to me" I said.

"The girl you bumped into at the mental asylum is the same girl Danger almost ran over and the same girl was here yesterday." Max explained.

"Ok what on planet earth was she doing here" I asked.

"She was delivering the piazza". Gareth said.

" That explains why the delivery was late.Shouldn't she be at the asylum."I looked at them confused.

"We wouldn't know but that's not the issue here.Danger left a message" Max said.

"And I'm the messenger.He said you should stay the fuck away from her or he will cut your balls and throw them to the dogs" Lewis said sounding excited.

"He can't cut my balls,he lives in me" I said.

"Anyway I don't think the issue is serious anyway. Let me go and call Ruth, she is probably worried."

I stood up.

"Sit down Jon McClain" Max said with a firm voice.

I sat down. "What now!" I was frustrated.

"Can Danger fall in love" Max asked out of nowhere. That question scared the shit out of me.

I laughed in disbelief. "No probably not. Danger is emotionless, he doesn't fall in love, he is just designed to kill." I explained

"What if there is a possibility that he can fall in love once he know what love is.I think he just doesn't know what love is" Gareth said.

I shook my head vigorously. "No no no he doesn't fall in love.If it was Joss I could have said maybe but Danger hell no.Why are we even talking about this right now"

"Because we saw Danger's reaction yesterday when he met the girl.The girl even provoked him and he didn't do anything he was just tongue-tied which is unlike Danger.On normal occasions the girl could have been in the hospital right now.We all know Danger doesn't take provocations quiet well he retaliates but yesterday he froze." Gareth said.

Now I was worried.

"I'm just curious what happens if the three of you fall in love" Lewis asked.

"I never really asked myself that question because I always knew that my alter personalities know nothing about love but in case that happens,it will be a survival of the fittest case" I said.

"Survival of the fittest exactly what does that imply?" Gareth asked.

"If it happens that the three of us fall in love.Two personalities has to die and the strongest has to take control of the body" I said.

"Die?" Lewis asked.

"Not six feet under Lewis.If it happens that we fight over control and maybe Danger wins me and Joss will cease to exist,we will literally sleep forever.My new identity will be Danger same if

Joss wins and if I win, it will not necessarily mean that I will be free from DID, I will develop new alter personalities." I sighed.

"Man I never realised how crazy you're. Man you're bananas" Lewis said looking serious.

We all looked at him and he shrugged his shoulders.

" Whaaat I'm just saying". He said.

"Well I guess we should call Doctor Gomez as soon as possible" Max said.

I stood up. "Danger can't fall in love man he will mess everything up for me. Ruth, my business.. He will ruin everything "

I felt light headed and the next moment it was lights out for me.

Yours Truly Joss

Its been like a year since I was caged in and I just felt the urge of taking control and I'm glad Jon allowed me to.

"He is opening his eyes" I heard a familiar voice saying.

When I opened my eyes Garie,Lewie and Wax were starring at me.

"What happened Jon" Lewis said.

This is my favourite among the three of them and I damn missed his crazy ass.I smiled and hugged the living daylights out of him.

"Ok ok ok hold it right there.Are you gay now" He said with a funny face.

I laughed and smacked his head."Missed me.Garie,Lewie and Wax?"

"Joss!!?" They exclaimed at once.

"In flesh" I grinned.

Lewie gave me a shoulder bump."Long time no see my guy" He smiled.Garie and Wax gave him the looks

"What I'm just being nice"

"So how have you guys been. Garie how are you. Wax still and ironman..you need to blow off some steam. I think gym will do" I highfived with Lewie.

"But gym is outdated he needs some whoretherapy...Wax" Lewie said mockingly.

"Its Max not Wax" He said looking serious. The guy rarely smiles.

"Ohhh sorry about that, you still the hard but?" I asked.

"He is dry, he needs to get some" Lewie continued mocking him.

"Say whaaat...he needs the whoretherapy then, what is that even?" I asked.

"Ohhh whoretherapy..he needs like 6 whores to help him blow off the steam" He winked.

"Ok I get it.Ok update me,what did I miss.Did Eve give birth Max and Katie got married to Jon?" I asked.

They all looked at each other.

"Katie is no more and well Eve and Max are no longer together she aborted" Garie explained.

"Danger happened right,I knew that fucker was up to no good and as for Eve don't stress Max a lot of pussies are waiting for you" I smiled and patted his shoulder.

He just shook his head.

"I have business to attend to, so see you guys." Max said and left.

I looked at Lewie."I gave you my paints and you promised to keep them safe from Danger and Jon.I hope you still have them.I wanna go to an exhibition today."

"I still have them and by coincidence there is an exhibition today at 12.I will text you the address right now let me bounce." He left with Gareth as well.

I bathed and wore some formal khaki shorts,white shortsleeved shirt,a fendi prints bowtie,fedora and nice formal shoes. My fashion icon is Pharell Williams so yea I go for his looks.

I took my Ferrari car keys and drove out.

I was playing happy by Pharell Williams.

Lewie texted me the address where the exhibition was taking place. While I was checking it out I hit something and heard people scream.

"Ohhh God what have I done. I ran someone over shiit"

I looked at her she was lying powerless having a nosebleed.

She looked at me before closing her eyes.

"Please please please don't die on me pretty please.." I carried her to my car and called Max. Luckily he answered on the first ring.

"I ran someone over if she dies on me I swear I will end my life." I said crying.

"What you're not making sense .." He said

"I ran someone over dammit.." I screamed.

"Ok ok relax did you check her pulse...ok do this take her to Jones private clinic I will meet you there hurry" He hung up

I drove like a maniac and within 10 mins I had arrived.

I found Max pacing up and down.I carried the beauty in my car.

"Im here a little help." I screamed.

Max ran to me and then suddenly stopped on his tracks once his eyes landed on the girl.

He whispered. "Shit"

End of chapter9

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter

Joss.

"I messed up".

"Will you stop saying shit and help me here." I screamed at Max who was still stuck at one place.

He zoned out of it and helped me out.

We were at the waiting area whilst the doctors were attending to her.

"So care to explain why you acted like you have seen a ghost" I said.

He sighed. "You are in real shit"

"Ok what did I do. I know I knocked someone but its not a hit and run. I even brought her here" I defended.

"Its not about that. Its about who you hit" He rubbed his head.

"Who is she? The president's daughter?" I said sarcastically.

"If I was you, I wouldn't be sarcastic right now. She is Danger's girl" He said with a serious tone.

I laughed like he had cracked the joke of the century. Well I'm familiar with Danger, Lewie once told me about him. He never messed anything up for me but from what I heard he is a heartless bastard and emotionless.

"You mean the Danger I heard about. If I can't fall in love, what about him. How on earth does he have a girl now. That's ridiculous. I mean that's a good joke you eased the tension." I laughed.

"I'm serious. He even warned Jon to stay the fuck away from her. You are in deep shit. Danger will come after everything that means the world to you starting from your favourite paintings, your art gallery." He shook his head.

"Ohhh my America. No no no he wouldn't do that. Those things mean the life to me. I express my feelings through painting. He can't do that....he can't" I shouted and sat down.

"Relax I didn't mean to scare you.." He tried to comfort me.

"No no he is going to destroy my things...he is going to destroy my feelings... Ohh no he can't do that" He tried to comfort me but I was having none of that.

Maybe coming out was a wrong move to begin with.

I passed out.

Jon.

I woke up and realised I was in the hospital. What the hell was I doing there. While I was wondering Max walked in.

"Joss you're awake" He said sounding not so sure of himself.

"Joss came out?,I thought it was Danger.What happened.What am I doing here?" I asked.

"You had a panic attack." He said.

"You could have called the doctor at my place.Jesus what the hell am I wearing" I looked at myself.

He laughed."That's Joss' dressing sense.Anyway the reason why you're here is because Joss ran someone over."

I stood up."The hell what was he doing huh and how is the person.."I.panicked.

"Well that's where the problem is. The girl in the accident is Danger's girl." He said.

I stood up immediately. "Say whaaat!!"

"I'm serious, its Danger's girl and its Joss' fault because he was texting while driving." He continued to explain.

I frowned. "That's none of my damn business. I can't continue to clean up the mess that my alter ego's create. When Joss comes back he will have to deal with this mess. Right now I need to get out of here and as for that girl I know the doctor's here will do their best to treat and the least I can do is to pay the bill. I have a lot of things to do".

"You're not that heartless Jon and besides the personalities are yours. They were created by you and it's your responsibility to clean their mess. The least you can do is to wait and be informed about her condition and then apologize to her". He said firmly.

"I'm not doing that shit ok. Danger warned me to stay away so I'm staying the fuck away from her." I started walking away.

"What if she lodges a complaint." He said. I stopped on my tracks.

"I did nothing wrong. It wasn't a hit and run. Besides the police are on my payroll so there is nothing they can do to me" I said boastfully.

"Come on man you're not that heartless. Just wait and be aware of her condition. What if it's

serious,we also haven't informed anyone from her family."He tried to reason with me but I was having none of it.

" Max you can play good Samaritan if you want. I'm tired of cleaning up the mess my alter personalities make.I'm tired.If its critical I will pay for whatever treatment that she will need.Other than that I'm out of here.First of all I have to get rid of this ridiculous outfit, Ruth can't see me in this".

"You have been cleaning Joss and Danger's mess for nine years.You have taken the blame of whatever they have done,why do you want to stop now huh?Why do I have a feeling that its not about your condition but its about the girl.You're trying your best to avoid her right because you're scared of the outcome. You're scared that she might bring out something in you that you thought never existed right.Say it dammit...!!!You're not heartless,you're just trying to avoid her.If it was someone else you couldn't have been saying this shit." He said clenching his jaws.

I chuckled."You're reading too much into things Max,maybe the one who needs help here is you.Im out here,you can nurse her if you want."I walked out.

Max can be annoying if he wants to be.What the hell was he blabbering. Avoiding her?Well she is not even an element in my life so why stress.

I walked to my car and switched my phone on.I had tones of missed calls from Ruth.

I called her immediately.

She answered. Finally you decided to answer your calls".She said with a sad voice.

"Babe I'm sorry ok. I was so busy". I said.

" So busy that you couldn't tell me that you were no longer coming for the dinner.You stood me up and it hurts.Did I do something wrong already.I mean its only a few days since we are official and now this..."She sniffed.

"Shhh babe please don't cry.I'm coming right up..Just give me thirty minutes I will be there and explain everything to you ok" I said.

"Okay" She continued sniffing. I hung up.

I drove like a maniac to her place. I found her curled up in her couch eating ice cream. Okaaay was I that bad already in this relationship thing. I heard if a girl eats ice cream a lot its a bad sign.

"Babe I'm sorry.. I was busy yesterday.. I'm sorry I stood you up."

I apologized.

She sniffed. "Its ok"

I sat besides her. "No its not ok you are curled up in your couch and you're stuffing yourself with ice cream. I'm sorry Ruth, I was too hooked up with work. I promise next time I will do better"

She looked at me. "First of all I'm your PA before being your girlfriend. You could have called me and we could have worked together. "

I sighed."Babe it was family related,I couldn't involve you.You know how my father is.Please can we drop this and move on.I'm sorry ".

She smiled weakly." Its ok and I'm sorry for being a nag.I really can't help it when I have a Greek handsome god for a boyfriend ".

I laughed." I'm your Hercules now"

She laughed too."Yea yea my own personal Hercules".

So we cuddled the whole day,talking about everything. Ruth came clean with the demons she battled with.Well she was a jealous freak and very insecure.She has been cheated so much.She

also has been in abusive relationships and that destroyed her.

I promised her to do my best and invent the best in our relationship.

Anyway around 7pm I went back to my house. Luckily the whole crew wasn't there or else they were going to be on my case for the whole night. I just went to bed because I had eaten at Ruth's place so I was covered.

I was just staring into space when my phone disturbed me.

I answered. "Lewis wassup"

"Do the right thing Jon. Do the damn right thing. Whats wrong with you!" He shouted

"Whoa whoa Lewis what's wrong with you!" I shouted back.

"You know exactly what I'm talking about. You're not that heartless Jon, if it was Danger I could have said maybe but you." He hung up.

Well Max must have painted me the bad guy.

A wave of guilty washed over me. My conscience was tapping its legs with arms folded looking at me.

I sighed.

"Am I that heartless?" I sighed and took my car keys.

Well and drove to the hospital.

I parked and started to battle with myself if I should go in or not.

Crazy enough I had bought three different types of flowers. Red roses, yellow and white lilies. No don't look at me like that, I was just trying to prove a point here. I'm not that heartless.

I walked to the reception.

A young lady there started drooling. Jeez I rolled my eyes.

"Ummm Hy I want to see--" Ohhh crap I didn't know her name.

"Ummm in the afternoon I brought someone here, which room is she in?"

"Ohhh she is in room23 in the private ward."

"Thanks".

I went to the room and stood outside.

Wait was I having cold feet.

I peeped through the glass that was on the door.She was asleep with a bandage on her hand and a plaster cast on her left leg.

I sighed and walked in.

She was breathing heavily,that means she was in pain.Was her condition that critical?

I placed the flowers in the vases and sat on a chair which was beside the bed.

Her was all over her face and it was disturbing her.I tucked it behind her ears and brushed her cheek.

"I'm sorry, I swear Joss didn't mean to.I don't know why I'm here though but I'm sorry you must be in pain." I continued to brush her cheek.

"I think I should go" I smiled and stood up.Then her phone rang.

I hesitated to answer but then realised that maybe the "crazy Nicki" who was calling was probably worried.

I answered. "Bitch where are you we are worried sick about you" She screamed.

"Umm she is in hospital" I said

"Whaat,when,how,why.When the hell did that happen,who did that...who is that jeck!" Ok I didnt know I was already in the interrogation room.

"She is admitted in Jones Private Hospital room 23 ..private ward." I hung up because I wasn't prepared to answer her 21 questions.

I looked at her one more time and left the room.I went to the doctor's office.Luckily i met him on the passage.

"Hy doctor I wanted to know the condition of the girl I brought in the afternoon" I asked.

"Ohh Mr McClain I'm glad you're here.Well April has two broken ribs, dislocated arm and a broken left leg.She also had a nosebleed when you brought her so we need to make sure that she doesn't have an internal bleeding from the head.We will have to keep her for a week to monitor her" He explained.

I rubbed my head.I didn't know it was this bad. "Ok thank you doctor and please make sure that she gets everything that she needs the bill is on me.Also don't feed her your tasteless hospital food,I will make sure she gets good food.When she wakes up don't tell her that I'm the one who brought her here, I will find a way to tell her myself"

"Ok Mr McClain".

I was about to walk away but stopped on my tracks." Ummm what did you say her name was".

"Ohh her name is April" He said.

"April what?"

"Well on her ID there is no surname" He explained.

"Pretty weird,anyway thank you." I left.

On my way to the parking lot I bumped into three girls who were looking like maniacs.They were all dressed in night wears, running around like headless chickens.I picked my phone and shook my head.They didn't even bother to look back and apologize.

I called Lewis and he answered on the third ring.

"What do you want?" He said in a annoyed voice.

"I did the right thing" I hung up.

April.

" *Someone is watching* *me".*

When I opened my eyes I wasn't surprised. It seems like the hospital has become my second home. I only remember being knocked down by some car. Wait I think I saw Jon's face or maybe I'm reading too much into things. I looked around my room and it looked expensive. It also smelled fresh maybe it's because of the flowers in the room. Wait who send them and how did that person knew that they were my favourite especially the lilies. I sniffed them and smiled.

"They are so fresh" I smiled.

Anyway I heard chaos outside my room. I could tell it was my crazy crew with the voices.

After some minutes Nicki was the first one to run in.

"Ohhh my USA what happened to you. You look so dead" She was wearing two different shoes and her nightwear was inside out.

Kiara and Jenny ran in with Kiki wearing a short nightdress. Jenny was wearing a bathrobe and a shower cap.

"God who did this to you" They said in unison.

"I also don't know everything happened so fast..I was crossing the road very well after looking at both sides and from nowhere a car came and the next thing I'm flying and landed then passed out" I left the part where I thought I saw Jon's face,I didn't want them to think I was going crazy and besides I wasn't sure myself people hallucinate.

"Ohhh my God who did this. Ain't the person supposed to be here to see how you're doing. This needs to be reported to the traffic police." Jenny said.

"No Jenny it's ok. Good thing I'm alive and besides the person did the courtesy of bringing me to the hospital." I said.

"What about the hospital bill.?" Kiara asked.

"I will take credit from Mr Cedric so don't worry....Oouch...I'm in pain..Let me lie down" I said since my ribcage was painful.

"Wow these are beautiful... Who gave them to you?" Kiara asked.

"I don't know. When I woke up they were there.I also know I will sound weird but I heard someone talking to me,tucked my hair and brushed my cheek.Well because of the medication I was too tired to open my eyes." I said.

"Maybe its a secret admirer,who knows.After all someone answered when we called it was a

deep masculine voice. So I think that male creature is the one who brought the flowers and there is a masculine scent here can't you guys smell it.". Nicki said.

She was right though there was a male scent which filled the room and it was so familiar.

Anyway this good looking male doctor walked in. He looked into his file.

"Hy April how are you feeling ".

" Ummm I think I broke my rib its painful on my chest. My arm is also in pain and I have a serious headache" I complained.

"Its ok you broke two ribs but we will make sure that you're fine as for the headache I will prescribe some medicines for you. We will have to keep you for one week since when you were brought here you were having a nosebleed so we have to make sure that you don't have any

internal bleeding. Hence we have to monitor you." He explained.

"Ummm why can't you discharge me I will just come for checkups.I mean staying here will increase the bill." I said.

"Don't worry about that dear the person who brought you here paid for everything." He said.

"On that note who brought her here?" Kiara asked.

"Well I don't know my shift just started so I didn't see them and nothing is recorded" He said.

"This is a weird hospital. There are papers signed where all the information is filled" Jenny said. She was already angry.

"Jenny its ok umm thank you Doctor." I faked a smile and the doctor walked out.

"This is serious April you can't take this lightly. What if its your mother" Jenny said.

"No this had nothing written Julian over it. If she really wanted me dead the person could have finished me off by now" I said.

" You're right". Kiara said.

So the girls went back to our place and the following day I was bored all alone. Thank goodness they gave me a wheelchair so I was using that to move around. I felt like I was being watched but when I turned to see who it was there was no one. The feeling kept going on and on till I was afraid so I went back to my room. I found yet another bouquet of flowers on my bed and a card. This time they were lilies. They were also plastic bags with food. The cologne from yesterday was all over the place. I smiled and took the card.

It read.

"If I had enough courage I could have faced you, I didn't mean to hurt you I'm sorry. Yours truly Joss."

"Hmmm so your name is Joss. You're such a coward."

I smiled and opened the plastic bags.

End of chapter

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 1

April.

"You again!"

Well I have been living a life in this hospital. It has been three days since I was admitted and I have been treated like a queen. The nurses were extra soft and nice when it comes to me. We all know how some nurses are but here I was treated like I own the place. The mysterious Joss kept on sending gifts...flowers, teddy bears, chocolates, cards you name it. Despite the fact that I didn't

know who the guy is I enjoyed it though. Whenever I felt like I was being watched I knew it was me. Not that I was sure but it was just a hunch.

The girls as always came to see how I was doing.

"Are you in a hospital or a romantic film" Jenny said with a silly frown. Looking at the flowers and teddies that were all over the place. Nicki was already stuffing her face with the chocolates and other goodies. She didn't even ask how I was doing its like I didn't even exist.

"Its not my fault that someone decided to treat me like a queen" I said smiling.

"Haven't found out who this Joss guy is?" Kiara asked.

"Its already enough that he is spoiling me with the goodies. When he decides to show up he will, I'm not gonna stress over it" I said.

"Then you will find out that he is an old man with no front teeth and he is busy spoiling you with pension money that's when you will stress about it." Nicki said busy eating my chocolate.

I threw a pillow at her."And you busy eating my chocolate you fool.You didn't even ask how I was doing "

"There was no need to ask seeing Mr Joss is doing a good job.Have you already pictured how he looks like" She raised her eyebrows.

"Ohh hell no I didn't even picture anything". I said.

" So with thee Joss guy in the picture have you stopped thinking about Jon".Jenny asked looking serious.

"I wasn't thinking about Jon that way.I was just worried about him ok" I said sounding annoyed.

"Talking about that have you come up with a plan" Kiara asked.

I frowned."Guys will you stop...stop already.You're pressurizing me and its ain't cool ok.I'm in a hospital with a broken leg,dislocated arm,broken ribs and instead of nursing me back to health you're asking to plan and plot."

"I knew it you were going to say this.We are here because we care about you but I can't help but feel that you're using us to feel the empty void your family left.When have you ever considered what we want April.Everything goes according to your plan.Ain't you the one who preached about justice back in the asylum.Ain't you the one who promised me that I will have justice because of what happened to me at the Pinks club.I made it clear that I don't want to go against the Jackson twins but you encouraged me now you're backing out because you have some sort

of a thing with Jon and once again we gave to respect that. You're selfish." Jenny snapped.

I felt guilty. "Please leave I wanna process my thoughts alone".

I covered my head with the sheets.

They left without saying a word.

Maybe whatever Jenny had said was true, except the part that I was using them to fill the void my so called family left. I was being too selfish and it was wrong but was it my fault that I couldn't think of any plan at this point.

I decided to go out and have some fresh air because I was already suffocating in the room.

I pushed myself outside.

After staying there for a while I decided went back inside. On my way back to my room I met the reason why me and my friends are now on bad terms.

"You again!!" We said in unison.

"What are you doing here..are you stalking me now" I said with a raised eyebrow.

He just smirked and looked away. "You wish I was stalking. I mean thee Jon McClain stalking April that's a sick a joke."

I folded my arms. "I don't remember telling you my name." I narrowed my eyes.

He cleared his throat. We shared an eye contact and this time it wasn't that one which send cold chills down my spine, it was the one which makes my knees weak. Its like through that eye contact we were communicating.

"Babe what are you doing. OMG did you come to pick me up." I looked at where the voice was coming from.

Well it was your typical woman with a model body. Beautiful legs and glowing skin. She was wearing a good outfit with red bottom heels.

Anyway Mr McClain looked at her confused."Umm Ruth what are you doing here?"

"Babe I texted you informing you that I would be here,my uncle was admitted here yesterday."
She explained giving me the look that one which says "please excuse us" but the stubborn me decided to give the look that which says... "I'm not going anyway".

" Ohhh umm I didn't check my phone I'm sorry Ruth" He apologized and I rolled my eyes.

This Ruth woman was probably a jealous girlfriend. Also the way she was throwing daggers at me you would swear that we have a personal vendetta or something. She was probably those girlfriends who want that unrealistic kind of love from a guy.

"Who is she?" She said.

"Ohh she is no one" Jon said and I don't wanna lie I felt something in me sting painfully.

She smiled at me the fakest smile I have ever seen. "You two seemed like you were in a serious conversation, did I interrupt something."

I sighed. "No you didn't. Enjoy your day".

I wheeled myself back to my room and on my bed there was the biggest teddy I have ever seen. You know those types you can sleep on.

"Joss must have sent this. I will name you Jolly"

Anyway I spent the rest of my days in sadness. My friends didn't visit me after what Jenny said. On the day when I was discharged that's when Kiara and Nicki came to pick me up with Mr Cedric's delivery van. I was given crutches to use.

Kiara and I weren't on speaking terms but Nicki was just Nicki.

"So the mysterious Joss never showed up" She asked.

"No he didn't. But I have Jolly now I will only remember him through Jolly" I smiled.

"Who the hell is Jolly?" Nicki asked.

I showed her the big teddy and she just laughed.

"Kiara how is Jenny" I asked.

"Fine". One word. The rest of the journey we were in silence. They dropped me off and went back to Italia.

Around 7pm they were back.

They had brought piazza and we ate in silence.

They were about to leave but I stopped them.

" I'm begging you guys please sit down we need to talk."They sat down.

"I'm sorry for being selfish guys Im really sorry but Jenny it's not true that I'm using you to fill an empty void.You're my world guys,you're my sisters. You have always been there for me and I'm grateful.I'm really sorry for being selfish and I mean it"

They all came and hugged me.

"And I'm sorry for snapping at you.I guess I was trying to find someone to blame for my own problems.You're not selfish April you just got involved in your own world and its understandable."

"Jenny what's going on.Are you going through something that we don't know about.You have been angry at everything and everyone lately." I said

She started crying."I found out who is adopting Justin and Joyce.The only thing left is for me to sign some papers then they are good to go.I know he is going to give them a good and luxurious

life that I can't give them. But they are my siblings I would do anything for them." She continued to cry.

"Who the hell is adopting them and why do we know about this now?" I said

"Max Jackson... Jon McClain's friend. He is the one who is adopting them. I can't let it happen. Max and his twin own the pinks club I ruined my life there what if Joyce does the same when she grows up." She wailed.

"Ohhh my America Max is the one adopting them and you didn't tell us about it." Nicki said and started pacing up and down.

"Jenny you kept important information like this from us" I said shocked just like everyone else.

"You had too much in your plate already I thought I could handle it on my own.He sent people to ask me to sing the papers and I refused.I thought I could handle it but it's getting too much now." She said.

"Do you know where he lives" Kiara asked.

"Yes I know." She continued sobbing.

Nicki stood up,went to our rooms and came with our morning gowns.

"And now what?" I asked.

She gave us our gowns. "We are going to pay Max Jackson a visit." She said looking serious.

"No no no are you joking we can't just show up at his house." I said.

"You're being selfish right now. We have to make it clear to him that he ain't adopting the kids pointblank. Jenny is not going to sign anything." Kiara said.

"Fine let's go then" I said lazily.

Deep down I didn't support this idea of just showing up at a business tycoon's house. However to avoid to appear as if I'm selfish I agreed to go with them. We took Mr Cedric's delivery van and drove off.

Jon

"I see you too".

I did everything I could to prove that I wasn't heartless as Max and Lewis had said. I was feeling guilty so I decided to do everything I could just to make her smile. It was Joss' fault that she was in the hospital which makes it my problem. So I would constantly check on her and making sure that she doesn't see me. My guys were still mad at me so after dropping Ruth off, I decided to go to Max's house the guys were chilling there.

I found them drinking beer, chatting and laughing.

I felt left out.

"Hey guys." I sat down.

"Hey" They all continued chit chatting.

"Haaa come on guys are we gonna act like pussies now" I said.

"The only one acting like pussy here is you" Gareth said.

"You just call saying you did the right thing and by that you mean paying the hospital bill" Lewis said.

I laughed."I bought her flowers,teddies,chocolates you name it.I went to check on her every minute I got depriving my time with Ruth.I made sure she got the best treatment ever ain't that the right thing "

"Wow you did whaaat!!!" Gareth exclaimed.

Max was just chilled. Nigger rarely smiles.

"And does she know its you?" He asked.

"I can't let her know,I will be in trouble with Danger, so it's better she doesn't know" I said.

One of the helpers came to Max.

"Evening sir,they are four girls who are here to say they said they have something urgent that they need to talk to you about" She said.

"Go tell them I don't meet anyone without an appointment" He said firmly,sipping his coffee.You

can't separate Max from coffee though.

The helper left and we all looked at Max.

"Why don't you just let them in and hear what they have to say" Lewis tried to reason.

"I'm not about to welcome whores in my house" He said

We all gave him the look but he continued drinking his coffee. The helper came back again.

"Sir they said its about the twins" She said and that got Max's attention.

"Let them in" He said and started pacing up and down.

"Is there something we should know" Gareth said.

"First let's hear what the girls have to say." Max said and that moment the door opened.

I thought my eyes were deceiving me. I blinked countless times. She was wearing silky pyjamas and a pink nightgown and was using the crutches to balance herself. Besides her was three other girls. The other one was in her short nighties and a nightgown too, the other one was in her pyjamas and her eyes were swollen she looked like she was crying and the last one had messy hair, was wearing different shoes and was chewing a gum.

"Do I have to see you everywhere I go." I frowned.

"It's not like you're the reason why I'm here" She rolled her eyes.

"Which one of you is Max?...ohh my you look yummy." The one with messy hair said looking at Lewis.

"Nickiii!!!" The girls said at once.

The Nick girl walked to Lewis ignoring the girls. "Well my name is Nicki Simmons these are my girls Jenny Jordan there with a puffed face she was crying but she is beautiful trust me and she is the reason why we are here, and there is Kiara Chester the cool one but with attitude for days and that's the famous April well Mr McClain here knows her very well. Gentleman sit down we got a lot of talking to do."

Lewis had a silly grin. "Since you're here to talk ladies I think we gonna need the whole night and the nighties you're wearing are not even helping".

" Lewiiis!!" ..Max, Gareth and me said at once.

The Nicki girl smacked Lewis's head."Silly lower your libido,we ain't here to fuck.Get your asses down gentleman ".She took Lewis's beer,threw herself on the couch and started drinking.

Max was irritated he hated disrespect especially in his own house.

" Don't waste my time what do you want to say."Max said with a firm voice.

The Nicki girl scoffed."Man you're dry,you need to get some to wash off the stiffness. Sit down and let's talk "

Max was about to relialiate but the girl with a puffed face spoke. "My name is Jenny Jordan like she said I'm Joyce and Justin's elder sister.I got to know that you're the one adopting them.I'm just here to beg you please don't take them away from me they are the only family I have." She sniffed.

"You're not fit to take cre if yourself do you think you can take care of them.You have been on drugs,mentally unstable and was in a mental asylum do you think you can take care of them"
Max said.

In a jiffy Jenny was abry and she slapped Max across the face.We all gasped.

"Jenny relax" April said.

The Jenny girl wasn't having any of it. "Now you listen to me Max Jackson.I don't care how powerful you are but money will not buy you happiness. You won't buy my siblings happiness with your money.I might have been on drugs,I might be mentally unstable but if it means I have to move mountains or walk on water for Justin and Joyce I will have fucken do it and not even your money will stop me.If you think I'm going to sing your shitty papers you had it all wrong" She clenched her jaws right at Max's face.

"We will she provided your dirty history if the social workers are going to allow you to take them." Max retaliated.

"Ok we are here talk as adults ok". The other girl named Kiara finally spokeGaret was just staring

at her.

" Hey stop looking at me you creep" She rolled her eyes.

Gareth chuckled. "I was just wondering how can a person look this ugly".

Lewis and Nicki bursted with laughter and high fived. These two got loose crews that I noticed.

"Nice one there" Lewis laughed. We all looked at them with serious faces but its like we had pushed their laughter buttons.

"Ok can we act like adults for once please. Can we talk properly." April said.

"We have done enough talking. Get out of my house". Max said firmly.

"Ohh my guy me and my girls are here to stay." Nicki said sipping on Max's favorite whisky. I don't even know where she got it.

"Nicki lets go. Max is already annoying me I feel like punching his stupid face and that was crazy of me to think he would understand. However this bastard got no feelings whatsoever, if you badly want children why not impregnate someone" Jenny said annoyed.

Max's lower lip started to tremble, this girl had hit home straightaway.

End of chapter1 1

Guys let's comment please it will motivate me...if you don't tobatana 2030 ndendichipo.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 2

"Demons of the past".

Jon.

"Ummm girls I think you should leave you have said enough already". I said looking at Max who was so close to breaking down.

Jenny sat down and folded her arms." I'm not going anywhere without letting this bastard know how selfish he is. How do you sleep at night Max? Knowing very well that you're hellbent in separating siblings.I may not be financially stable but for my little ones I can do anything humanly possible to give them the best life but you Max Jackson because you are filthy rich you

want to take that away from.I have already spent so much time away from them but you want it to be forever. I have never met someone as selfish as you.If you badly want a child go out there look for a willing victim, or use a surrogate mother or adopt a child who doesn't have anyone.My siblings doesn't need a selfish man like you for a father."

The more she spoke you could see that her words stabbed Max's heart a million times.He had bit his lower lip and was continuously brushing his hair back.

Lewis was devastated seeing his twin.As his friends we were devastated too.Seeing Max so close to crying broke our hearts because he is emotionally stable among the four of us.

"Jenny you have said enough ok.You don't know my brother you have no right whatsoever to judge him like that.I know him better than anyone and being selfish is not one of the things Max is, if anything he is adopting Justine and Joyce for the goodness of his heart."

You can mess with Lewis whichever way you want but messing with Max is a dangerous zone,you will see the worst of Lewis.

Nicki continued sipping on the whiskey with no worries in the world.The girl is just mysteriously funny.

"Relax tiger.Jenny dear you have said so much for just one day my ears are already ringing.When are you guys gonna finish this talking talking I'm tired."

She yawned.

April sighed and looked at me. Well she actually caught me starring at her, I don't even know why I was starring though. She flipped her long hair and rolled her eyes. "We came here hoping that we would talk and settle this thing as adults but it seems people had a lot of feelings to vent. I apologize for that. Max I'm sorry on behalf of Jenny if she said anything that has offended you, trust me she is a good person but we all know that when it comes to people we love we can lose all morals. Hopefully you two will settle this issue rationally and as mature adults. You can't really behave like kindergartens fighting over candy. You two must know that they are little souls involved here don't punish them for your own personal selfishness, it will be really unfair. I would suggest that your next meeting do it in public we don't want people slapping and throwing punches at each other ok. Nicki, Kiara, Jenny let's go."

Wow I was amazed by her maturity. I never thought a mental patient can think so maturely.

"Finally I can breathe" Gareth said frowning at the Kiara girl. Well I didn't know these two had some personal issues too.

"Get a life creep and stop gawking at me like you have never seen a beautiful human being before ." Kiara said at Gareth.

"Like I said before I was wondering how a person can be this ugly. Your face is so mixed up.." He said mockingly.

Kiara just clicked her tongue.

Nicki burped.

"Ewww" Everyone except for Lewis frowned.

"Your whiskey is good Mr Max. Don't be surprised if I show up here unannounced I will probably be coming for the whiskey." She looked at Lewis and grinned. "Bye better half....ohhh come give babe a hug".

Lewis stood up. "With pleasure better half. Sleep like a queen that you're babe." Everyone looked at them without knowing what to say. When did they even reach the stage where they call each other babe and hug. I mean like WTF.

"Whaat!?" They looked at us.

"Girls just get out of my house" With all the drama that Lewis and Nicki were dishing us we forgot that Max was hurt.

"Let's go girls" April said. They started to walk out. Something in me wanted to stop her but I just let it be.

"Ohh April dear get well soon, I hope you love the goodies that Jon has been sending you, but trust me though he really didn't mean to run you over." Lewis blurted. I wanted to punch the silliness out of him but realised that it was alcohol that was doing wonders. When Lewis is drunk he has a loose unfiltered mouth.

She stopped on her tracks and looked at me. "Did what he just said the truth. You are the one who ran me over?" She said angrily.

"Ohh chill girl don't act like you didn't like the gifts he send you,you even named the big teddy Jolly." Nicki blurted too and highfived with Lewis.

I wanted to laugh but the look she was giving me made me think otherwise.

"Answer the damn question Jon McClain ..are you the one who ran me over?"

She asked.

"Jo--...I mean yea y-yes I'm the one ..who r-ran you over but I...I.... didn't mean to ok.." I said and don't even ask why I was stammering.

"And you decided to just leave me at the hospital just like that" She said.

"Was I supposed to nurse you back to health.I mean I even paid the bills and the gifts were a cherry on the top.I didn't hit and run." I defended.

She used her crutches to hit me.

"Ouch what the fuck is that for.?" I said nursing my arm

"A fucken apology...a damn sorry was gonna make things right...I don't care about the bill you should have just said sorry.What if my condition was very critical and what if I had died you were going to send gifts huh.Just a simple apology,just a simple courtesy but no you even had to lie to me.Are you Joss huh!!"

She continued hitting me with her crutches. I held her arms strongly but not rough.

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry ok.Im sorry." We shared yet another eye contact. Its like she was trying to read if I was telling the truth.

"Ok ok cuuut...cut..cut..don't tell me we are about to move to that episode where you guys shove your tongues in each other's throats" Nicki said holding her waist.

"Ok I have seen enough drama for today let's go".

She dragged April.

" You're going to have to compensate for lying to me and not saying sorry"April said angrily.

I really don't understand a specie called a woman didn't I just sorry what was there to compensate for.

Anyway Max went and opened the door.

"Leave now before I call the security."

"We are leaving,we are not planning to stay." Jenny said sounding annoyed.

Finally they left.

We sat in silence for a few minutes and the for opened again.

Boom Nicki came in running.

"You forgot something?" Gareth asked.

She ignored him and went to the mini bar, took two bottles of whiskey and French wine.

"Yes I forgot this. No one says no to free whiskey and wine. Lewis babe imagine me naked ok. Goodnight good people." She left us picking up our jaws from the floor.

What kind of a woman was this?

Lewis just grinned and shook his head. "I think we both have a half brain"

"You guys please leave I wanna be alone." Max said. Wait did he shed a tear. Max Jackson was crying. Jenny really did a number on him.

"Twinny you're crying." Lewis went and knelt beside him.

"No no no Max you're a man,the great Max you don't cry...no no no"

"Everything she said was true...I'm selfish right and I'm gonna act like it.Everyone thinks I'm selfish they don't see the reason why I do what I do.I will make sure I will adopt those kids with every dime in my account.All I want is someone who calls me daddy because I know that I will never father anyone the natural.I'm sterile.The only chance I had was with Eve and she aborted my baby but still I'm the selfish one." He cried.I have never seen him like this.

We were all equally shocked by the news he just told us.

Max.

"Past demons we battle with".

"Twinny you're sterile and we only know this today huh. I'm your other half for crying out loud, how dare you pretend like you had your shit together. How dare you didn't confide in me about this Max how dare you"

Seeing my twin mad at me like this broke me. It came out wrong, I didn't wanna share this. I'm used to solving my own shit despite having people who can help me.

"I'm sorry ok. I didn't wanna bother you with this Lewis". I apologized.

Jon sighed. "Max you have always been there for us whenever we need you. You're like a father figure to us. We are your friends Max how could you go through all this alone. You should have told us about this".

"Was telling you going to help me make babies huh." I snapped.

"The fact that you carried this on your shoulders all alone hurts us. We feel so insignificant. How could you hide this from us Max. We have been through shit together as a team we never hide anything from each other but this... No Max.." Gareth rubbed his head.

Lewis stood up. "I wanna know everything how, why and when did you find out about this."

I sighed. "I hate talking about Eve you know that"

"Talk dammit. I don't care about that bitch of a cousin who you loved just talk dammit and if this has something to do with her I will fucken kill her.. I don't care if she is uncle Ken's favorite daughter". I have never seen Lewis this angry.

" You're right I loved her and that toxic love led me to my sterility. Everyone was against our relationship because she was my cousin but she was adopted and I didn't see her as my sister. When Uncle Ken married her off I couldn't stop loving her on top of that she was already pregnant with my baby her husband was kindhearted enough to let her keep the baby but she said I was just one selfish bastard trying to ruin her life so she aborted without my knowledge. I

was devastated bro. You remember when I said I needed time out and went to London. There I started doing drugs because I was grieving my dead baby and the love I had for Eve. So because of the drugs I destroyed myself. Already I had a low sperm count that I didn't know about but before I was doing drugs it could have been cured with drinking my medication and eating well but I ruined those chances. So the doctors said I don't have a slim chance to ever impregnate anyone. I realised that I have ruined my life crying over love so I decided to work hard and make a name for myself. It's better to cry in mansion than under the bridge. Besides working helps me keep my mind off things. When that girl was calling me a selfish bastard and telling me to impregnate someone I felt my soul dying a thousands deaths. I have always chose peoples happiness Lewis and you know it. When Eve got married I never slept with her she was already pregnant. If I really wanted I could have ruined her marriage because I knew which buttons to press for her to melt in my arms. When she aborted I never took a legal way to punish her. If I wanted I could have sued her for killing my baby without my knowledge but I didn't. I decided to deal with the pain my own but still everyone says I'm the selfish. Well if that's the case then I'm going to show that girl how selfish I can be". I said clenching my jaws.

"Didn't I fucken tell you to stop the thing with Eve. How many times did I tell you that she was our cousin but you refused to listen. Now look where that got us. Because of your stubbornness bro we are not in good terms with even our parents not to mention our relatives, because of that stupid teenage love you ruined yourself Max and on top of that you kept all this a secret. Mama didn't gave birth to you alone, I was by your side nigger we are the surviving sperms that night mum and dad fucked which means everything we do, we do it together but you had the fucken nerve to hide this from me." Lewis was really disappointed in me.

"I thought you would treat me differently" I said

"Seriously... Despite having different faces and character ...I am you and you are me Max.I'm so hurt and disappointed. You hide such a big thing from me".

Everyone was hurt,but I thought keeping this a secret was to protect them.To protect them from worrying about me.

" We are going to leave you guys Max I will see you when I'm ready to face you man.I need to process all this. I can't believe you kept this a secret" Jon said walking out followed by Gareth.

"I'm not going to leave if that's what you're thinking. With the way you keep secrets you might be suicidal for all we know.I'm staying here and drinking your whiskey dont even talk to me because you're already annoying me." Lewis said and walked to one of the guestrooms.

How did I get here? If only that stupid Jenny had signed the papers,my kids could have been running around here. Its not lie I was going to make them forget about her but noe she leaves me no choice.I will do anything to make them legally my kids.

I must have dozzed on the couch because I woke up while Lewis was carrying me to my room.

He threw me on the bed and got me under covers.

One thing Lewis possess is tender care he takes after mom.

The following morning i woke up late and by Kate I mean 8 am. There was a cup of coffee for me. Lewis had prepared that I know because he puts too much sugar.

I drank while in bed.

He walked in. "We got a family lunch today everyone is expected there, you included. We are going to plan mama and papa's anniversary there. Everyone will be there and by that I mean even Eve. So get ready to face your demons." Lewis said maintaining a straight face.

"But Lewis..."

"No Max you have to face your demons sooner or later. For how long are you going to avoid the family Max. Today we are going together. Now gt your ass to the bathroom."

He walked out and banged the door.

I knew I could not hide forever. I bathed and wore a black crispy shirt, black trousers and brown formal shoes.

I had long hair which almost reached my shoulders, I have never been a fan of cutting my hair so I just tied it.

"You're done" Lewis walked in wearing jeans, a white muscle T-shirt and Nike sneakers. His trim in the sides was neatly brushed and the hair in the middle was neatly combed he usually leaves it messy.

"Yea let's do this" I said.

"Don't get it twisted, I'm still mad at you"

I sighed. We drove off. When we reached we were late and now we had to make the grand entrance. We walked in and all eyes were on us. There like 15 people in the lounge, talking and laughing but when we entered everyone went dead quiet.

"Did you really have to keep quiet...hello good people" Lewis was just Lewis.

I greeted mom and dad then sat down. I had promised myself that on this first visit home, I would prove to my family just how much I had changed, matured and distant almost from the guy who loved her cousin.

"Ohh my my we are blessed ain't we. It isn't very often these days you manage to tear yourself from the delights of Georgia." I clenched my jaws hearing the sarcastic voice of my cousin bro Kenneth, Eve's brother. We never got on particularly well even as children.

"It was commented that on Easter you weren't around, but we all know Eve was really the reason for that, don't we" He said jibingly.

"Spend more time thinking about your own relationships and less talking about other people's you might learn something genuinely worthwhile, but then you never were much good at appreciating what's really value in this life, were you Kenneth?"

I left him to pick his jaws from the floor.

"Have you spoken to Eve and Saul yet?" My mom asked softly.

"No I haven't... why should I. For God's sake when is everyone in this family going to stop behaving as though... I'm..." I stopped and took a deep breath.

"Look for the last time. Eve means nothing to me. I loved her yes. I made a total complete fool of myself over her yes but it's over mom" I sighed and walked away.

I was never going to allow myself to be a slave of emotions that's why after Eve I never wanted to be in a relationship again.

I stiffened as I saw Eve making her way towards me with a baby girl. There was no escape for me.

"Max" ..

"Eve" ...I said maintaining a straight face. I looked at her and then at the baby. It was clear this

was her baby.

"You've kept your hair this time. I like it. It suits you. You look like those Greek heroes." She said forcing a smile.

" Thank you"

As the silence between us stretched I was well aware that everyone else was watching us and remembering.

As I turned to move away from her the baby reached out, grinning and stretching its hands.

I sighed, my baby could have been 9 years now.

"Ohhh I think I'm going to sneeze. Please take her for me."

Before I could protest I found myself holding a beaming fat baby.

"No no no its gone.." She said but made no attempt to take the baby back.

I sighed and gave her back the baby."You killed my baby Eve..no need to rub it in by giving me your baby."

"Max I'm sorry...i"

I walked away without replying.

This was going to be a disaster lunch.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 3

April.

"You need some senses knocked into your head"

After the incident at Max's house we went back home in complete silence it was only Nicki who made her funny remarks and laughed at her own jokes. They tried to talk about the issue but I just dismissed them and went to my room. Jenny really acted so foolish and crazy there. They were supposed to come to an agreement which benefits both sides but no she had to act all bipolar and if I say anything I will be the bad guy.

The following day was a Saturday so none of us were going to work and also I was still on a sick leave.

I woke up late because I didn't wanna deal with those three nutcases early in the morning.

Around 9am, I woke up, did my hygiene process and went to the kitchen to make myself a bowl of cereal. I went to the kitchen and found the girls in silence. Nicki was drinking her whiskey that one which she took from Max's house, Kiara was just standing on the sink with her arms folded and Jenny was just starring into space.

When I entered that's when they looked at me.

"Good morning" I said lazily.

"What's so good about this morning?". Kiara replied.

" Excuse me?"I raised my eyebrow.

"April you just dismissed us yesterday when we needed to talk do you think everything is alright"
Jenny said.

"Ohhh so its my fault now.You wanted me to celebrate your stupidity Jenny huh...Ok if that's the case then yeeey Jenny you just acted stupid yesterday." I said with a mocking smile.

She frowned. "Seriously you wanted me to keep quiet and let him walk all over me."

I roughly rubbed my head. "That's the point exactly. That's where you are wrong my dear. There is nothing wrong with humbling yourself Jenny even if you're the right one but no you had to go all "schizophrenia" (Jenny's mental condition) on him. Look first and for most I was against the idea of us going there because I knew the outcome of it very well, but no I had to go with you just so I prove that I don't only think about myself. Jenny you were supposed to act like a civilized person and mature adult but no Jenny couldn't have all that. You even went as far as slapping him, what was that for. You said a lot of things to him and you went as far as insulting him, for all we know that house might have CCTV's the whole drama might be recorded and you know what if he uses that footage in court he will automatically win the case. Besides that everyone saw what happened they might be his witnesses. Do you even know why Max has the upper hand right now, he didn't retaliate, he was so collected, he didn't even do anything when you slapped him. I believe that if Max really wanted to take the kids without even involving you, he could have done that so easily when you were in the mental asylum. Already you have a lot of dirty shit on your head, you committed crimes, you were on drugs and on top of that you have an unstable mental condition. The social workers even went as far as taking the kids to an orphanage after they had realised that you were not fit to take care of them. Max could have adopted the kids successfully but he involved you just as an act of courtesy Jenny. Look Jenny don't get this twisted honey, I'm on your side and I will support you come what may but have you took a moment to consider the life that Max can give to the twins? Look I know very well how it feels to be away from your family, I know that better but Jenny even if you're given the twins how are you going to take care of them huh? As it is you can't take care of yourself and you're not sure if your mental condition is finally gone.

I was suggesting that you talk to Max and both of you reach an agreement which makes him a daddy and which doesn't separate you for them. Lastly I'm sure Max and the twins are already attached, I'm certain they have been bonding for a year now"

She sighed and tears started gushing down her cheeks."I messed up girls.I really messed up.I acted on impulse without thinking through everything now I see how stupid I was.Ohhh my God I messed up everything. Did you see the way he looked at me when I was talking nonsense non stop,I'm sure he hates me with every fibre in his body and he will make sure I will never see the twins".

I hugged her."Shhh relax honey.I don't think he is that type of a person.We can accuse him of everything but I don't think he can possibly separate siblings, I doubt that."

"And how sure are you Miss Know-it-all." Nicki said with an eyebrow raised.

"I'm not saying I'm hundred percent sure but we can't be quick to judge him for we all we know he might be the most nicest person. I mean did you guys notice that when Jenny was shouting at him,he wanted to cry.He might be going through stuff you never know. All I'm saying is let's not be quick to label him the bad guy." I said.

Jenny continued sniffing. "So what am I gonna do now, how am I gonna face him after this. After being all ratchet on him, what am I gonna do"

"You acted on impulse it's understandable, he might very angry and threaten you it's understandable after all you disrespected him in his own house. I suggest you give him time in fact you both need it. Then when you're collected enough you will face him". I said

Kiara chuckled. "After the whole saga I doubt if Max ever wanna see Jenny. I mean those spoilt brats are full of themselves. I bet Max will make Jenny lick his shoes before he talks to her"

I chuckled. "You and that Gareth what was going on because I feel like all that you said is directed to him."

She frowned."Ohhh my that one he was gawking at me like a kid which just saw candy and then he has to say I'm ugly my face is so mixed up.I felt like punching him.Gosh I have never met anyone who annoys me like that.First impression should matter right and Gareth is just full of nonsense and he is so creepy arggghh"The way she was frowning.

"But the guy is handsome you wouldn't deny that" Jenny said.

"Yea yea but my Lewis is the most handsome among them" Nicki said with a serious tone.

"On that note you and Lewis were already hugging calling each other babe..." I said looking at confused.

She grinned."Ahhh babe we even talked about our wedding while you guys were arguing. That

one is my future husband."

We all laughed. "Just stop Nicki"

We said and she was serious you would swear she meant every word.

"Well but still I can't believe we messed up with the four most popular business bachelors in Georgia. I wish I could take a selfie in that mansion and by the way who do you think is the most handsome among the four of them" Jenny said.

"Umm I think Gareth takes the cup" I said trying to annoy Kiara.

"Ohhh please that one ain't even close to cute." Kiara said frowning.

"I think Jon takes the cup. That one he is dangerously handsome and that icy blonde hair does the justice, it matches his icy grey eyes and pink full lips. Also the height is a turn on, he is the tallest and got muscles to die for." Jenny said with a silly smirk.

I rolled my eyes. "Ohhh please that icy blonde hair makes him look like a grandpa. In my own opinion Max takes the cup I mean have you seen his hair and how it just almost reached his broad shoulders. He is heroic handsome if you get what I mean. If I could take the career of acting then he would go for Thor." I said.

Jenny rolled her eyes. "In that case then I think Lewis is the most handsome. He is cute and naughtily handsome is there is such thing. I mean did you see his silly smirk and how he continuously lick his lower lips it all screams.. "Im a number one player" ..."

"Yea that's my baby..naughtily handsome is there even such thing but anyway I think Gareth is cool handsome. I mean he was just chilled. Kiara accuses him of gawking but those Asian eyes of his are a turn on.." Nicki said and we all laughed.

"So in conclusion they are all handsome in different ways. Jon is dangerously handsome, he is that type of a guy who gets you wet by just a smirk, then Max is heroic handsome that one you can imagine him carrying you the bridal style, then Lewis is cute and naughtily handsome that one who makes you act all naughty and then Gareth is cool handsome I have never heard of such though but anyway his Asian lazy eyes can make you drop your pants..." Jenny said with a naughty grin. One moment she was crying though but discussing the guys eased the tensions.

I smiled and looked at them." Back at the asylum if someone had told me that one day we were going to sit down and discuss about guys, I could have punched that person, I'm so happy we are out"

"Nxooo" They all said and we had a group hug.

"Guys I have an idea on how to solve the JennyMax issue" Nicki said with excitement and we knew for a fact that the plan was going to be a dangerous one.

"Ah ah Nicki just keep the plan to yourself" Kiara said.

"Its a good plan April just have to talk to Jon..so that Jon talks to Max to be easy on Jenny simple." She said.

Everyone looked at me."No dont even look at me like that.Jon is not my friend ok,I don't even know him that much and we are not in good books and I hate his ego.Nicki since you said you and Lewis will be married why don't you talk to your future hubby to talk to his twin".I said mockingly.

"Even if I want no one takes us seriously so Max will not listen to Lewis." She said sulking.

"But her idea is good April...go talk to Jon" Kiara urged.

"No no hell no. I can't even handle his suffocating presence then you're telling me to go and beg him..hell no" I refused.

"But you named the teddy he bought you Jolly." Nicki said.

"So what? leave Jolly out of it" I said standing up.

"But the guy is sweet April I'm sure if you coax him he will give in." Jenny said looking desperate.

"Whoa hold it there girls, what makes you think my coaxing will work. He has a girlfriend good people a jealous one so please leave me out of this idea. Anyway I finally have a plan hashtag#get answers from J McClain mission."

They all looked at me with excitement. I shared my plan with them and they supported it but I hope it works.

#Get answers from JM.

Danger.

"When you smile the *whole world stops and* *stares for a while"*

It has been hard for me to take control these past few days ,Jon wasn't letting me but I'm glad I managed to take control during his sleep because he was having nightmares well part of the

bitter memories which are blocked for him by me. The first thing I thought of was that delivery girl. How was she doing? Was she happy? Did anyone bother her? I don't know why I asked myself those questions but yea I was just curious, unfortunately she wasn't there to answer me.

I was disturbed by a helper telling me that someone wanted to see me.

Ahh Jon's people.

I lazily walked downstairs wearing sweatpants and nothing on top.

"Call them in" I told one of the helpers while sipping some wine. A way to start my morning.

He went out and came back again. "Here she is sir"

For some reason my heart started to pound abnormally before I could even see who it was.

"Geez go wear a shirt".

Now I knew that voice even in my deepest sleep.

I turned and she was still looking the same, it felt like I haven't seen her for ages. What kind of a feeling is that?

I frowned as I saw her balancing herself on crutches with a plaster on her leg and a bandage on her hand.

"Who the fuck did this to you?" I was already standing by her side in that blink.

"Who the hell did this to you?"

She looked at me confused then went to sit down.

"Answer the damn question woman!...who did this to you?" I was blazing already.

She looked at the wine, then back at me and chuckled. "Don't drink stuff you can't handle now it makes you lose your memory. Have you forgotten Mr that you're the one who did this huh"

I clenched my jaws. I fucken made it clear to Jon that he should stay away from her but no he

went as far as doing this.

I felt suffocated and for the first time I felt Jon trying to take over while I was awake like this.

"Hey are you ok.Are you feeling dizzy" Her voice startled me.

I sat down and did a breathing exercise. Jon was really trying to take control,so I kept on tilting my head.

"I just had a lot to drink I will be fine".

" My goodness Jon you are red all over your face and you're sweating."Within a blink she was by my side checking my temperature with the back of her hand.

"My goodness you're having a fever.Ohhh God you're burning" She panicked.

"Relax I will be fine" I said.

"Are you fucken crazy.Lie down... Have you seen yourself."

She limped to one of the helpers and I don't know what she said to him but he ran like a headless chicken with a moment there was a bowl with warm water and a towel.Some iceblocks and my medical kit.

"Relax girl I'm fine" I said but she was having none of it.

"You want to die in my watch then the headlines will be like..." A mysterious girl named April murdered Mr McClai n Jnr in his own house"She said while wiping off my cold sweat with a warm towel.

Well I was glad I knew her name was April so I smiled.Which is rare of me.

"Stop smiling its not funny,you're not well you should see the doctor." She suggested.

Yes I wasn't ok Jon was trying to takeover by making me have a panic attack but I was suppressing it.I wonder why he badly wanted to take control this was my damn moment.

"I'm fine there is no need for me to see a Doctor anyway why are you here.Are you here to see Jon?" I asked frowning.

She chuckled. "Don't ever drink again. You're Jon hellooo.Anyway the reason why I'm here its for that compensation I told you about,you ran me over and its a great disadvantage for me." She said with a serious tone.

I had to out my act together. "I'm sorry about that so what do you want money?"

She nodded."Yes I want money but not for free.I need a job.Being in a sick leave is not doing any favours and besides where I work they don't pay that much".

"So do you have a job post you might want? do you have qualifications?" I asked.

She smiled. That was the most beautiful smile I have ever seen. "I'm not planning to work in your company Mr McClain if that's what you're thinking. I have a diploma in hotel and catering but I'm not planning to be chef either. I think a helper will do. I will work during the day then at night will be at the restaurant. It will benefit me".

I secretly smiled to the idea. She just made my life easier. She will always be around and when I take control I will get to know her and I will see her everywhere. Her strawberry scent will be everywhere.

"Umm let me call my lawyer then we need to draft a contract."

She laughed. "A contract, what for. I mean I'm just being a helper."

I secretly smiled. She was so clueless I was doing this to protect her from Jon. In case he wants to fire her he will not be able to because of the contract and I was going to make sure that the contract states that if he fires her she has the right to sue him for any amount of money. After all he injured her. In fact if he fires her he will have to give her a blank cheque. I know it's crazy but right now her life is on hold because of what he did.

"It's for Jon security reasons"

I said and took Jon's phone and called his lawyer.

I explained everything to him and demanded that the contract be drafted in an hour. Since he was on Jon's payroll he said it will be done.

I went back and sat down. "He said the contract will be done in an hour".

She smiled and something about that smile made my heart leap in joy. "Thank you" She said.

For some reason I felt like it was responsibility to make sure that she always smile. Besides killing and ruining the lives of Jon's enemies, making her smile like that became part of my to-do

list.

"So if you smile like that it means you're happy.?"

I asked.

"That's ridiculous question. Of course it means I'm happy" She said.

Since I didn't know emotions, I only knew anger I was just curious. "So what is happiness, how does it feel to be happy"

She laughed. "You're crazy. Anyway since you asked. Happiness is that feeling contentment or pleasure. Like you feel satisfied and contented about something that your heart leaps in joy and your smile brightens."

I took her hand and made her touch my chest. "Can you feel it my heart is leaping does that mean I'm happy. Is this how it feels to be happy?" I asked curiously.

She cleared her throat and removed her hand."Umm your heart is beating abnormally are you sure the fever is gone?"

I sulked."So it means I'm not happy"

"What you just did there it portrays sadness.You're happy Jon don't be sad"

I smiled and she smiled too."So if someone smiles it means they are happy"

"A smile can hide a lot of emotions but speaking for myself if I smile it means im happy." She said.

I nodded. "Umm Appie"

"Appie?" She looked confused.

"Its short for April, by the way you can call me Dee..its my nickname." I said.

"Ohh ok Dee.." She said sounding not so sure.

"I wanted to say remember on 21 June the time is 11:30am I told you that you have the most beautiful smile I have ever seen" I said looking serious.

"You're so drunk and if your girlfriend hears this she will slaughter me" She chuckled.

Before I could reply one of the helpers came with Jon's lawyer.

We sat down and discussed about the contract. Appie was shocked when she read the contract.

"\$5000 Mr McClain. I will just be a helper and this condition of a blank cheque incase you fire me its ridiculous." She said with her eyes popped out.

I took the contract and the other copy and signed.

"Sign" I demanded.

She hesitated at first but then signed.

I gave her one copy and kept one. The lawyer left.

"I know you think everything seems too good to be true" I said and she just nodded.

" Can I have your phone". She gave it to me hesitantly.

I called one of the security guys.

"Please transfer the CCTV footage of everything that happened today between me and her into her phone" I said.

"Ok sir" He ran to the control room. After a few minutes he came back.

"Here you go sir its done"

I took the phone and gave it back. She played the video and smiled.

"Thank you, bye see you next week."

I just nodded.

She walked out.

I sighed. "I hope I have protected you enough."

I felt lightheaded and I fainted.

End of chapter1 3

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 4

Max

"Get over it"

I was well aware that by now everyone was paying attention to every move of mine after my encounter with Eve. I don't get why I'm always painted the bad guy here.

I saw Saul(Eve's husband) making his way towards me.I quickly looked over my shoulder,but the door to the kitchen was blocked by my dad and uncle Ken,who were in deep conversation, Lewis whom I might have expected to be my ally had managed to melt away.There was no escape for me.Saul was already by my side.

"Hey man" He said and we shoulder bumped.

"You have been scarce." He said while smiling nervously.

"I'm a busy man you can't blame me." I said smiling genuinely.

He sighed."I still feel guilty about everything Max.I really do.If I could turn back the hands of time I--"

I interrupted. "Its been 9years Saul and every time we meet you always say you feel guilty,you apologize over and over again but what's there to apologize for?what's there to feel guilty for?You were victim in everything and Eve wasn't meant to be mine to begin with.Don't ever feel like you ruined my life by marrying Eve,it was just that she was my first in everything so it was hard for me to let go.Believe me when I say this I'm over her when I see her,I see my cousin.There is no bad blood between us." I patted his shoulder.

He sighed in relief."I always thought you hated me but hearing you say this I'm relieved. We should do a lil catch up,I will text you.I have your number."He said.

"Cool man".

We started talking discussing about business. Saul Harrington had a lawfirm.He was a renowned lawyer himself.

Finally lunch time came and we sat around the table.The chef served us and people started eating and chatting. Some faking smiles and all that. Uncle Ken would constantly throw daggers at me.I sighed.

" When are you twins getting married?"Uncle Ken asked and I just looked at him.I wiped my

mouth because suddenly I lost appetite.

Before I could retaliate Lewis beat me to it.

"Why are you so curious about it,your son Kenneth Jnr is already 35 or is it 40 but he is still living with his parents." Lewis said rudely and everyone gasped.

"I know why you asked that Uncle Ken.I'm over your daughter,I'm no longer that foolish youngster who made a complete fool out of himself over someone who didn't give a damn about his feelings." I said looking at Eve who couldn't even face me.

Lewis stood up and tapped his glass with a spoon."Attention everybody just so you know Max has a girlfriend,a very gorgeous one,very feisty and doesn't take bull from anyone. Things between them are very serious that maybe soon we will hear wedding bells".

He smirked and I knew he was getting back at me for keeping secrets from him.I knew he was angry but how could he do me like this.

Everyone was surprised.

Mom was overjoyed. "Ohhh my God.I thought I would die without seeing my daughter in law but my God finally answered my prayers.Ohh Lord why do we know about this now.How long have you been together.I want to know everything.In fact why didn't you come with her." Now I had to lie because of Lewis.I couldn't disappoint my mom and everyone on the table but the problem is I was never good at lying.I always stammer but for Lewis it just flows.

"Umm mom this lunch is for the preparations of your anniversary not to discuss about my girlfriend." I said drinking some water.

"And besides people you know Max is very secretive I only found out about it a week ago but he has been dating this girl for five years now.So believe me when I say this,soon very soon we will hear wedding bells.." He continued putting me in a tight corner.I looked at him and he just winked.

My dad smiled."What about you Lewis?"

Serves him right.He laughed."We all know this bachelor here will get married at 45,so don't even ask.I'm still young after all"

I rolled my eyes."We are twins duhh."

Everyone laughed.

One of my aunts spoke."And we heard you're adopting is your girlfriend ok with it and when are you getting the kids anyway because we seriously can't wait to welcome them in the family".

Eve choked and everyone looked at her."I-I-i didn't know you're adopting "

Lewis beat me to it again."And its not like you are that important and there is something caller minding your own business".I bet everyone could feel the tension. I'm sure Lewis hated Eve left,right and centre.

I sighed. "Umm aunty to answer your question well there is a procedure that I have to do to finally adopt them but it seems it will have to be a courtcase now".

" Ohh my dear,if it goes as far as that why don't you look for other kids who don't have anyone."My father said.

"Its not easy dad I have bonded with them for a year now.They are twins and they remind me of Lewis and my childhood a lot.I have grown to love them as mine and same applies to them.I take them out every weekend, so you can imagine its not easy to let go.They always ask me.." Daddy M when are you taking us home"..they have already started me calling me daddy I just can't disappoint them like that.I have already promised them a good love,I can't raise their hopes and then disappoint them."I explained.

"Umm if going to the court is the one last procedure you know where my law firm is.I will be so happy to represent your case." Saul said with a smile.

I smiled. "Thank you"

Mom came and sat besides me."So is your girlfriend ok with adopting "

"Y-yea mom".I said and gawked at Lewis.

" Great then.I will have to see her,I can't wait to meet her.Ohhh my God I have to call a wedding planner.Ohh there is a lot to do"She said pacing up and down.

I sighed."Moom relax,I haven't even proposed.Right now can we focus on your anniversary preparations"

Everyone laughed.

"You don't know the feeling and you will never understand. You two are my only children and hearing that one of you is about to start a family its great news,it's like I have achieved something.I will definitely have to come see your girl,I hope she likes me.I don't wanna be that monster in law.When you plan to propose tell me I will gibe you the generation ring ok." She said and dad just laughed.

"Relax wifey,she will love you. You will get along". My father said.

Lewis laughed not realising the mess he just did.Mom had a heart problem and if I break the news that there was no woman for me then she would definitely have a heart attack. I can't risk that but then again I don't want to be in a relationship with anyone, I didn't want to be a slave of my emotions again.Also I couldn't lie to my family like this.I sighed not knowing what to do next after the drama that Lewis had dragged for me.

Anyway people started to discuss about the preparations while I was still lost in my own thoughts.After the lunch was over,we said our goodbyes and went to the car.I drove in silence and after we were far from home I looked at Lewis.

"What the fuck was that for. Max has a girlfriend.. Seriously Lewis did you have to make up such a big lie just to get back at me" I said sounding frustrated.

"I'm sorry. I was just mad and besides you always did that when we were young, you always put me on a tight corner." He chuckled.

"Jesus Lewis this is not funny. Do you see the mess you have just done. Did you see how happy mom was, did you see how happy dad was. You know our mother has a heart problem and if I tell her the truth I don't even have a girlfriend God knows what will happen to her. Now I will have to continue with this lie and God knows the truth will come out one day." I roughly rubbed my head.

"Well I didn't think about that but that's not a big deal you will just find a fake girlfriend introduce her to mom then later tell them you broke up.. things didn't work simple" He said lazily.

I smacked his head. "Did you forget the part when you said we have been together for 5 years and weren't you there when mom was already thinking of planning a wedding and giving me a generation ring. We are in this mess because of you".

He shrugged. "I don't see where the problem is. You will just find a girl to marry... I mean a fake wife people do that a lot in the movies"

"And my life is a movie now. You think a marriage is a joke that you will have to fake it." I said firmly.

He chuckled. "Fake it till you make it bro"

I chuckled in disbelief. "God when you were giving me a twin you had to choose him. Lewis I

already have a lot in my plate right now and now this."

He shrugged again. "That's your baby to nurse now. Anyway how are you going to deal with this adoption case."

"I'm taking it to the court". I said dryly.

He laughed. "You're my other half I know you will never do that. I know you will never prove those people who call you selfish right. I saw the look on your face when she came in crying, I knle you felt pity for her. Max you may look tough, professional and wear a poker face but you can't lie to me. You have the softest heart ever its only that you're not good at expressing it and I'm damn sure that you will never be able to go ahead with separating siblings, that I'm sure of. Its only that Jenny was rude to you but I know you understand where she is coming from."

Well most of what he said was true, he is my twin after all.

"So what am I supposed to do, you tell me" I said.

"Adopt her too". He laughed.

" This is not funny.But still I don't understand why she badly wants them,she was in a mental asylum, she was into drugs.. She--"

Before I could finish he interrupted."Whoa whoa hold it right there Mr...Don't be too quick to judge her you don't know the reasons why she did what she did and why she ended up in the asylum. You of all the people can understand this better,you have been into drugs too but no lme is using that against you.Have you taken a second to think about why she took drugs and why she was in an asylum. For all we know she might have been through shit and taking the twins away from her will destroy her even worse."For the first time he said something meaningful.

"Man I didn't think about that" I said.

"Now you did. My suggestion is you guys sit down and talk as mature adults." He said.

I rolled my eyes. "Did you think she will agree to that. I mean one minute she was fragile and another minute she went all Rambo on me. Did I tell you how much that slap stings. Besides she is so immature nothing productive will come out of the discussion."

He nodded his head. "You're right she is immature but she looks so young though but she is feisty that one."

I laughed. "But Danger's girl takes the cup. What's her name ohhh April. She looks Dangerous that one".

" No wonder Danger has an interest" He said.

"Talking about Danger. Call Gareth and tell him that we are meeting at Jon's place. I have to ask for forgiveness."

He nodded and dialled his number.

April

"Weird encounter".

On my way back from Jon's house I was so absent minded. What was wrong with him, he was addressing himself in third person narrative. And I felt the cold chills again. He told me my smile is beautiful.

He told me to address him as Dee what did it stand for.

I roughly messed up my hair, screaming. "Arrrgggh God what's going on here?"

The taxi driver looked at me in a weird manner.

"Are you on drugs ma'am" He asked.

I rolled my eyes. "Mind your damn business and even if I'm on drugs, it's none of your damn business, drive the damn car. I paid for it"

He didn't say a thing and then he dropped me off. I found the girl sitting in the lounge arguing and laughing about something.

"Hey girls" I said limping in.

They all ran to me like kindergartens. "How did it go,did he agree,did he give you a hard time". Each one of them was asking her own question.

I sat down and handed then the contract without saying a word.

\$5000 for a helper and a blank cheque in case he fires you.This is ridiculous April.Are you sure this is a real contract?" Kiara said with an eyebrow raised.

"I was surprised as well,he called his lawyer and went as far as giving me the CCTV footage when everything happened. I mean why would he do all that and to think that I will have to be a snitch,going through his business deals is killing me after he did this.What if he later finds out the real reason why I'm doing all this. He has been nice to me" I sighed.

"Its not like you're doing something wrong .You're just going to dig into his business deals and look for information that's all." Jenny said.

I sighed. "That's where the problem is girls.I will be invading his privacy what if I find things I shouldn't, you know these businessman do illegal deals and all that.However I have to do it,I have to know where I come from, I have to know my origins and I have to know my father."

"We are in this together dear,don't stress it bitch." Nicki said.

"Umm guys I need to go and see Doctor Gomez today but right now I need to rest.Wake me up at 2 ok." I excused myself.

I went and threw myself on the bed,then drifted to lalaland.

After a while I was awakened by cold water all over my body.I opened my eyes only to see Nicki holding a bucket smiling.

"Are you kidding me.Nickiii!" I screamed.

"You said we should wake you and I did just that.A thank you would be appreciated." She said sitting down.

"A thank you for pouring water all over me" I said limping to the bathroom.

"That's the only normal way I know of waking someone up.So tell me wassup,what's bothering you.Jon?" She asked smirking.

I sighed."Yea let me go and bath"

I bathed and called a taxi which drove me to the mental asylum.I took a moment standing at the front gate remembering the first time I was bought at this place.It was horrific. Anyway I limped my way to Doctor Gomez's office greeting some patience along the way,I was popular after all.Luckily I found her busy with her files.

I knocked and walked in."Doctor"

She looked at end came to hug me."Ohh my I thought you would never come back.Ohh God what happened to you?"

"A minor accident. How are you" She helped me to sit down.

"I'm fine just stressed about work." She sighed. She looked so tensed and tired.

"What are you working on Doctor?" I asked.

"I have a case. Dissociative Identity Disorder popularly known as multiple personalities." She said.

I sighed. "It must be stressful, you know I never thought it actually existed."

"It does the first person to have it was from Soviet Union. He had 24 different personalities." She said.

"24!!Doctor how did it work?" I asked with shock written all over my face.

"Umm people didn't actually believe it first they thought he was trying to fool them into believing that he hadn't committed a crime,apparently one of the personalities had murdered. Later on they realised it was true because one of the personalities was so so good at this certain language which everyone knew that he wasn't good at.Since it was a knew mental illness there was no cure so the victim ended up committing suicide because it was too much for him." She explained.

"What causes it?" I asked.

She sighed."Its a defense mechanism which goes wrong.In most cases the victim could have suffered child abuse or great pain in attempt to block the misery they create another personality know as an alter ego.Also in attempt to protect oneself from future misery they create another personality. Each personality will exist for a reason and in most of the time the owner of the body will not remember anything to do with why the personalities were created" She explained.

"Wow that's hectic.No wonder you're this tired." I said.

"Yea I have been working on this for a month now and the patient is not an easy one.I wish you were my PA this is too much" She sighed again.

I laughed."I have two jobs already. Anyway how is Nicki's mom doing? "

"She is drinking her pills, eating very well.She is still has hope that her son is out there alive and her daughter will find her" She chuckled.

I shook my head only if she knew what Nicki was up to.

"But I believe her story you know.Her son might be alive out there,maybe she was right that her son was stolen. I mean if it was the traumatic stress disorder she could have been over it

now.Its been like what 30years now and someone can't be crazy still saying the same story about how her son was stolen.Why wasn't the case investigated"

She nodded."You maybe right but its a cold case now most of the evidence was destroyed and no one will be interested to investigate it.Maybe a miracle will happen that the daughter will meet her brother "

I sighed."Miracles do happen."

We talked and lost track of time.Around 6 that's when I decided to leave but first of all I went to see Nicki's mom.She was doing just fine and I told her that Nicki was doing her best to find her brother.

Luckily I found a taxi.When we were faraway from the asylum and were now passing by the woods the taxi driver realised that we were being followed.

"Please get out of my car maam.I don't wanna die I have a family. these people want you

because I don't have beef with anybody and no one ever followed me before."The taxi driver said.

I cursed." Fuck man...how can you be a pussy like this.They might be coming after you because they know you got money. "

Before he could retaliate the car which was following us screeched in a halt in front of the taxi.

Two bulky man masked came out and made their way to the passengers side.I knew they were after me.

"We want her.So drive off and never breathe a word to anyone." The taxi driver didn't wait for a second he drove off within a blink.

The other one dragged me by my hair.

I screamed.If I wasnt injured like this I could have take them down but now I was praying that God send an angel to save me.

I bet God heard me after all,I heard a car coming our way and I started screaming for help but then the car passed and the two man started laughing.

"No one will save you today."

"Let go of her!!!" The voice startled the three of us.

We all turned and I felt tears slowly coming out.

"Jon please save me.." I cried.

The other guy laughed again and threw me on the ground."Two versus one,you will die if I was you I would leave and my mind my own business".

"She is my business." He replied and one of them threw a mean punch at him that landed him on

the ground hurting his head in process. He passed out.

"Jon please wake up.You're my only hope.Please wake up..Please Jon I'm begging you wake up.Please Jon." I cried crawling.

The two man started laughing. "He was acting all bossy but just one punch he passed out."

They started dragging me again and screamed in pain.

"Let go of her or I will kill you." This time the voice was too deep and had command. We all turned and he was back on his feet again.He looked angry his eyes were bloody red and had veins popped out of his forehead.

"You want to die now young man." One of them said.

I have never seen someone move that quick but in a snap Jon was already breaking the bones of this two guys.He had turned to a creature who was on a killing spree.He held them both by their necks choking them.I didn't want to be a witness of a murder case.

I crawled and held his leg."Please don't Jon..Don't kill them you're not an animal don't ".

I managed to stand up and hugged him." Please that's enough.Please let them go".

End of chapter1 4

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

April.

"It's my right to be *jealous"*

"Please stop that's enough.You have already dealt with the it's enough now Jon.Please I'm begging you stop.". I continued to plead because he was still choking them.

" But they wanted to hurt you Appie.They wanted to make you sad."He said.

I cupped his face."Look at me I'm fine,I'm perfectly ok you saved me,please let them go.Please for my sake.They are not worth you going to jail,let them go" I pleaded again.

He freed them and the one started coughing but the other had already passed out.

"Never mess with her again if you value your life" He roared.He hugged me tightly.

"I'm sorry I took control a lil bit late.Did they hurt you". I was suffocating me with his tight hug.

" You're hugging too tight.I'm fine ok"I said.

"I'm glad you're fine but you ain't smiling. Did I do something wrong?" He was being weird

already.

I smiled."Thank you for saving me Jon".

He cleared his throat. "I told you to call me Dee".

" Okay thank you Dee"I said.

"You're welcome.Let's go Appie".

"Umm the taxi driver left with my crutches." I said.

He didn't say anything he just scooped me up in a bridal style and walked to the car. Everything was just in slow motion for me, I felt like I was in some romantic action movie.

He carefully placed me on the car seat and held the door.

"Are you ok". I was worried because those hooligans hurt his head.

He groaned." My head is aching."

He sat down and started titling his head countless times. Then suddenly he stood up in panic and looked at those two guys lying on the ground.

"Did I kill them April" He asked in panic.

"Relax , you didn't. I managed to stop,you were not yourself its understandable." Now I could conclude that this guy had issues,the way he just acted earlier and the way he was acting now was totally different.You wouldn't believe it if I was to tell you that the guy I was facing now almost killed two grown bulky ass man.He came into the car and we sat in silence for some minutes.

"Thank you for stopping me before I could do something I was going to regret.I was just angry,im going through issues with my family so I thought this was a perfect opportunity to vent my anger.I'm not like that.I also know you're going to ask me if I have ever killed anybody with the way I acted earlier well I didn't." He cleared his throat and looked away.

I sighed. "Its ok,you don't have to explain yourself.I'm just grateful you came at the right time for a moment I thought I was going to die before working for you."I chuckled.

He looked at me with confusion.

I sighed." Come on don't tell me you forgot that I'm going to be your helper.Are you suffering from temporary amnesia now"

He chuckled. "No no umm it just had slipped my mind, like I said im dealing with a lot so you know the pressure. Can't wait to see you at work." He cleared his throat again.

"Well you're really pressured that you almost forgot what happened in the morning". I rolled my eyes.

" Anyway okay umm can you drive away. I don't want the police to find us here" I suggested.

He nodded and started driving. "So why did they want to abduct you?"

Obviously Julian June had everything to do with this but I couldn't tell him.

"I don't know rape me or something".

" Why did you have to come here all alone April,its dangerous. "He said.

" Its not like i have money to hire a taxi for four people or money to hire guards.Besides,if not for the fact that I'm injured thanks to you,I could have gladly kicked their butts"I said in annoyance.

He laughed. "Kicked their butts you say.Are you some sort of a kungfu master or something".He scoffed.

Now he was annoying me.I don't get him one minute he is the sweetest guy ever and another minute he is so annoying.

"You will understand when I will kick your butt one day".

He just chuckled.The rest of the journey it was total silence.

" I'm driving to my house,there I will call my doctor so that he will make sure you didn't sustain any injury.Plus you need a cup of coffee to calm your nerves."

"Okay". Hell no I didn't want to stay one more minute with him,his presence was suffocating me at some point but my mouth just had to agree.

He drove to his place then parked into a garage full of different types of cars.This nigger was filthy rich.

He came to my side and carried me again as he made his way to the front door.

" I didn't leave the lights switched off" He murmured and opened the door.

He walked in and switched on the lights.

"Hey babe". A voice startled us.

He was shocked and even I had to pick my jaws from the floor.

The room was decorated in red and white rose petals, scented candles and dim red lights. That girl, I mean his girlfriend was dressed in a red lingerie, black heels and a lacy night gown..showing off her bony structure.

I could feel Jon's breathing changing and him swallowing countless times.

He carefully placed me down and they shared a deep passionate kiss. Hell no in my presence!!

I coughed to get both their attention.

" You again? Babe what is she doing here I thought you said you didn't know her" She almost shouted.

I sighed. "I'm his helper, he just rescued me on the way."

She walked to me and held my collar. "No one said you should speak. I'm asking my man here not a nobody like you. You really can't expect me to be nice to you when you just invaded our privacy, me and my man by now should have been making love at the couch you're sitting. Also you ruined the surprise."

If I wasn't injured this bitch could have been on the floor right now without two front teeth.

"Babe relax ok". Jon said sensing the tension.

" Thank you so much Jon for saving me earlier.But now I have to leave you and your girl to make love."I said trying to stop tears which were threatening to come out.I don't even know why I wanted to cry anyway, when my family betrayed me I never felt this way.

"But you need crutches" He said.

"I will manage." I tried to stand up but the leg was still painful so I almost fell but thankfully he caught me before I could.

"You're not strong enough yet. Let me go and call my driver so that he can drop you off. Babe please be nice." He walked out leaving me with Miss Feeling myself.

She chuckled and clapped her hands twice. "You a nobody....you want my man don't you but let me tell you something I will be damned to let a thing like you ruin what we have".

I laughed. "You got issues, real issues. I don't understand this, I'm a nobody as you said but you feel threatened. Jealousy and insecurity when its not necessary its a total turn off let me just advice you because you will end up making a complete fool out of yourself. "

She clenched her jaws. "I will make sure he fires you".

I smirked remembering the contract. "Bring it on Missy. I wanna see that happening. If I was you I would get used to my presence because you will see more of me here because I'm here to stay I ain't going anywhere."

Before she could retaliate Jon came back and carried me to his garage where a driver was waiting for me. He carefully placed me and walked off without saying a word. His boner was visible and that hurt me only God knows why because that's his girlfriend and they are bound to make love. I'm a nobody to him anyway. The chauffeur drove off.

I sighed and swallowed painfully. "By now they must be making love on the couch that I was sitting on".

I whispered.

Anyway the driver dropped me off and the girls helped me to sit on the couch.

I just hugged Nicki and wailed in her arms.

Don't even look at me like that, I don't even know why I was crying.

" Shhh its ok..don't cry..its ok". She brushed my back.

After venting it out. I drank some water and they looked at me with questioning eyes.

"Julian is at it again" I said softly.

They all gasped. "That bitch, is she a psycho". Nicki said.

"What happened?" Jenny asked.

"I was coming from the asylum and a car was following us. Two men came out and dragged me. I thought I was going to die. But then Jon came out of nowhere and he broke those guys' bones like it was nothing."

"Jon really did that?" Kiara said looking shocked after I explained every detail of how he almost killed the guys.

"Yes I was shocked myself. He wasn't himself though." I shrugged.

Nicki raised her eyebrow. "So is that the reason why you wailed like that. What did Jon do that made you cry like that".

I looked away. "He didn't do anything. Its like things were too much for me so I lost it".

They were all not convinced. "Jon definitely did something. I'm sure. However you must be protecting him so we are not going to dwell on it." Jenny said.

I sighed in relief because I wasn't ready to be played third degree by them. "I saw your mom Nicki she is doing just fine because she hopes that you're going to find her son."

She sulked."Where on earth will I find him.I'm not an investigator nor do I have the resources."

"Well for now let's deal with Jenny and April's case after this we will go on #find Nicki's long lost brother" Kiara said and we all smiled.

Sometimes I think we had too much confidence though.

Anyway I refused to eat and went to my room.I looked at Jolly then I tool her and hugged her.

I felt my tears making their way down.

I sighed and hugged Jolly."Friend do you think I will ever fall in love and have a boyfriend who I will wear a lingerie for?Will I ever solve all the problems in my life.Julian is on my case and I wonder why she wants to end my life so badly.I also want to know who my father is.Also my sister friends need my help.Jenny and the twins need me,Nicki wants to find her brother and Kiara I know she has this void in her that she can't fill..her family abandoned her when she needed then the most and will she ever be able to get over the fact that she will never have a child?What did the four of us did wrong,we don't deserve this?"

I cried silently and drifted to lalaland.

Jon

"I'm worried about you".

I tried to kiss her but she pushed me off.

"Again you were with her but you told me that you didn't know her the other day at the hospital".
She shouted.

" I didn't deny knowing her,I said she was no one."I said frustrated.

"So who is she? Who is she Jon? The other day you were with her what were you discussing and today how did you even meet her? You came in with her in your arms why and how am I supposed to feel about that?" She folded her arms.

"Are we gonna argue about this all night now. Ok you want the truth here is the truth. Her name is April I accidentally hit her with my car that's why I was with her at the hospital and I'm even lucky she didn't press charges. She delivers meals so her being injured was being a disadvantage to her I had to give her a job. Today I saved her from being abducted. Now tell me is there a problem?" I asked.

She looked down. "I'm sorry babe I didn't mean to shout but trust me she wants you and she is using this to her advantage. She is not what she looks like. She is cunning".

I shouted. "Ruth stop, stop just stop already. You're being a turn off right now. I don't understand what your problem is you don't even know the girl but already you're throwing baseless accusations at her. I don't get why you get to punish me for your past relationships, am I like the

guys you used to date. Why are you punishing me with your endless insecurities and nagging".

She started sniffing.

I lowered my voice. "Look I'm sorry babe I didn't mean to shout She means nothing to me. I love you and only you ok." I hugged her.

"Promise you won't hurt me" She said.

"I promise I won't, now can I make love to my woman."

She just smiled and I kissed her. Minutes later her ripped lingerie and my clothes were flying all over the place. I had it hard with her because I was frustrated. The girl was careful she had everything prepared because we used protection.

"Whoa babe that was one hell of a fucking there but be easy on me next time. I'm sore down there." She said laying her head on my bare chest.

"Yea right" I said absentminded.

"What's wrong. Didn't you enjoy" She said sulking.

I baby kissed her."I did, I'm just tired can we sleep now my love".

She smiled and minutes later she was snoring lightly on my chest.

Well as for me if sleeping means starring into space and blinking countless times then I did just that the whole night.I was exhausted yes from all the fighting Danger did but I couldn't close my eyes.You now the guilty conscience. I had that but I didn't know what i did wrong.On the other hand I was worried about April something in me was telling me that there is something wrong in her life.I made a mental note to find out what it is.

Around 6am I bathed and wore my sweatpants and a vest.

I went to the drivers cottage and asked him for April's home address.

He gave me and I drove off after telling the chefs to prepare Ruth a delicious breakfasts.

I drove to downtown. And reached the apartment. It wasn't a place that I would want to live in but it wasn't that bad.

I knocked for like three times and no one answered. I was about to give up but that mysteriously funny girl opened the door. What's her name again ohhh Nicki.

"Ohh my my look what the cat dragged in. Jon how are you come in friend" She gave me a hug.

The apartment wasn't that bad though.

She sat down.

"Ohhh please sit down, feel at home" She said sitting leg crossed. She was so comfortable with me like I was her old friend or something.

"Hy Nicki" I said.

" I'm fine Mr McClain so what can I get you juice,water,coffee... What do you rich people drink anyway?"She raised her eyebrow.

I smiled."We drink what you drink but anyway thanks I'm fine.I'm here to check up on April.How is she doing?"

"She is doing just fine,thank you so much for saving her we heard you played Rambo yesterday but on that note what did you do to her?"

She asked.

I sighed,I didn't do anything that I'm sure,unless Danger did something to her.

"I didn't do anything ,what happened?" I asked.

"The driver dropped her off and the moment she saw us she wailed in my arms. I have known that girl for over a year now, she is the strongest among the four of us. She went through a lot but never shed a tear even when she was supposed to make us wonder what type of a person she was but yesterday she cried her lungs out. Did you do something to her, did you say anything that offended her.?"

"No I didn't. I mean why would I?" I said.

"Fine then because if anyone dares to hurt her I swear on my vagina that I will show them my psycho side. Anyway since you're here to see her come on I will show you her room." She led the way and I followed.

"She must be asleep, don't annoy her she will cuss you" She smiled.

"Thanks and I will keep that in mind."

She patted my shoulder and left.I slowly opened the door and entered.

She was curled on the big pink teddy bear that I bought her.Her hair was all over her face and her pink nighties were on her waist revealing her mixed race coloured thighs and butt cheeks, they were so yellow and thick.

I shook off all the nasty thoughts and walked to her bed.I covered her thighs and sat down.

I tucked her hair behind her ear revealing her face.She was red and puffed.

"Just let me sleep..five more minutes please" She said in her sleepy voice pouting her small cute lips.

"Hey I'm here to see you wake up". I said softly.

She immediately jumped up and covered herself with the sheets.You would swear she wasn't asleep.

" Ohhh my God what are you doing here."

I laughed. "You should look at your face right now.I'm just here to check on you.I'm sorry,I couldn't call a doctor yesterday."

She looked away."Its okay I understand, but as you can see I'm perfectly fine.You can leave now".

"Well I'm not leaving unless you tell me why you were crying yesterday. Did I offend you?" I asked.

"No you didn't.It's my business ok.Who told you anyway" She said in annoyance.

"Nicki told me. Did perhaps Ruth said something". I asked looking cross.

" No she didn't and even she said something I wouldn't blame her. Noe can you leave" She said.

"Why are you trying to push me away. Who will carry you to the bathroom anyway?" I asked.

"I will limp". She started removing the bandage on her hand.

" No don't do that. You're not healed yet." I tried to stop her.

"Im fine I can feel it." She said.

"Are you an x-ray noe,can you tell that the bones are fine". I said.

She sighed". Don't tell me you drove all the way from the first street just so that you can annoy me.Who died and made you my doctor?"

I just shook my head.I didn't know girls are this hard.I walked to her closet and took out a long loose T-shirt.

"Where are your undergarments?"

She looked at me like I was crazy."Ok where are your panties and bras".

"What do you want to do with them?" She asked.

I rolled my eyes. "Wear them. Arggh girl do you really have to be this hard. I'm helping out here..you will bath have breakfast and we will go for a checkup".

I opened the drawers and found the one which had neatly packed babypink and white panties.

I laughed.

She frowned. "Why are you laughing."

I took one panty ad spread with my hands.

"Really babypink"

She threw a pillow at me. "You pervert,leave my panties."

I laughed."They look so cute,where are the bras".

"I have none" She pouted.

"Why?" I asked.

"My boobs aint saggy,do you have a problem now.Will you stop going through my things?"

I ignored her and took the clothes as well as her lotions to the bathroom and placed them on the toilet seat.I went back scooped her and placed her in the bathtub.

"Do you want me to bath you?" I said mockingly.

"Eww get out pervert." She shouted.

I laughed and walked out. The apartment wasn't big so I easily found my way to the kitchen. The girls were busy eating whatever that was in their bowels.

"Ohhh my my what is this hunk doing here." The one who had a personal vendetta with Gareth said. Kiara yea right.

I just chuckled. "Hy Kiara. Hy Jenny".

Jenny looked at me with sorry written all over her face.. " Hy Jon."

She said softly.

"Don't be sad I'm sure Max understands where you're coming from". I said because I was sure that was the reason why she had that look on her face. She just smiled and nodded.

" What are you guys eating? "I asked.

" Coco pops friend,want some?"Nicki said.

"No I'm good.But I think April must eat something healthy than this". I said.

" Yea we know but cooking is a long process".Kiara said.

I wasn't really good myself at the cooking department but I had to try.

"I'm not good myself but she has to eat something cooked.I'm taking her to the hospital.So I will try cooking."

They all looked at me with shock.I just laughed and started working on my not so good skills.Cooking was Joss' thing not mine.The girls were talking laughing and I would join in their silly conversation here and there.I felt so comfortable with them.

"The eggs were almost burnt though". Nicki said with a silly smirk.

" She will have to eat it though".I carried the tray with breakfast to her room.She was already done sitting on her bed.

"Here you go eat your breakfast. I'm really not good at cooking but I tried".I said genuinely.

She smiled." Thank you."

She ate everything.

"For someone who is not good at cooking that was delicious".

" Thank you, I will carry you now".

My conscience slapped me that was a foolish line.Ok why was I even bothered about what to say to her.

Anyway I just carried her and passed by the lounge.

"Yes man carry her,show them....hahaha here goes Rambo and his bride" Nicki said and I just laughed.Lewis is crazy but no this one takes the cup,she is naturally drunk.

"Bye girls see you later". I said.

" Bring her back in one piece and don't you dare make her cry again."Kiara shouted as I drove off.

"You ain't the reason why I cried they are being ridiculous. I was still in a state of shock." She said with a straight face.

"Should I maybe call a therapist so that they can help you get over the shock". I said.

She shook her head." Hell o,I spent many years in a mental asylum. I don't want to see a shrink.No thanks I'm fine."

"Ok".

The rest of the journey we were in silence. We saw the doctor and they said her hand was fine but the plaster was to be removed after two weeks. She also complained of headaches and they gave her pills because apparently she had migraines because of the nosebleed. After seeing the doctor I drove to the mall.

" And what are we doing here now? "She asked.

" Umm I'm gonna buy a few groceries I will be back".

I had realized that in her kitchen there wasn't much food for four people so I bought what I thought was enough. The shopkeepers assisted me in carrying the plastics to my car.

"Umm is there anything you want before we leave?" I asked.

"Candyfloss" She said sounding excited.

"How are old are you again" I said with my eyebrow raised.

"Do you want to buy me candyfloss or not?" She raised her eyebrow too.

"Ok fine we gonna have candyfloss". I went and bought her the Cotton looking like candy.

" Here go" I have g to her and she claped her hands sounding excited. I must admit that was cute. Especially seeing her stuffing her face with the cotton looking like candy.

I took out my handkerchief and wiped her mouth. "Slow down on the candyfloss".

" It will melt don't you know that.Haven't you had candyfloss as a kid she asked?"

I looked down in sadness because I didn't remember anything from childhood days.I didn't know anything at all.

She smiled."Hey what's with the sad face.Come on try its sweet.Come ooon try it".

She insisted.

I tried it.

"Its sweet,thanks". I wiped my mouth.

" Now we can go".She nodded.

I drove off."So where is your family you guys.I mean the four of you".

She sighed. "We are a family. Please don't ask me more questions related "

Maybe it was a sensitive topic. "I'm sorry for prying".

I can't believe me Jon McClain is apologizing like seriously what has gotten into me.

Anyway we arrived at the apartment and I helped her with the new crutches that I bought from the hospital.

"Are you comfortable".

" Yes I'm comfortable and Jon you are being weird. What's going on in your mind?" She narrowed her eyes.

"I just feel its my responsibility since I'm the one who landed you in this condition."

I said before I could say anything my phone rang. It was Ruth.

I checked the time it was 12:45pm.

Crap I lost track of time.

End of chapter1 5

Keep them comments and arguments coming.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 6

Jon.

"Keep your friends close and those who can control you closer"

"What is it Dee everything okay" April asked looking at me and I was shocked not by the question but by the name she just called me.

"W-what did you just call me?" I asked

"Dee.Yesterday in the morning you said I should call you that and when you saved me yesterday I said thank you Jon but said you wanted to be called Dee remember.What's really going on with you Jon?" She said looking concerned.

I cleared my throat."I gotta go as you can see my woman is calling. "

She just nodded."I understand you don't wanna talk about it.Anyway thank you for the greasy bacon and the almost burnt eggs you served me in the morning ,it was really delicious. Also thank you for the groceries and everything as well."

I just smiled."Take care of yourself.I will keep in touch and by the way I need your phone number".

"I don't think your girl will be cool with it" She raised her eyebrow.

I sighed and took her phone then punched my codes and saved myself on speed dial."Call me if you need anything and if anything happens bye."

I brushed her cheek and drove off like a maniac.

I arrived home and found Ruth on sitting on the couch watching something about this Los Angeles big family Kardashians something.

"Hey.I'm sorry I lost track of time I had important errands to run". I kinda hate explaining myself.

She stood up and folded her arms." Seriously "

I sighed and roughly rubbed my head."Look Ruth if you wanna fight me right now do it.Shout,throw things at me just do it.I will just be chilled because seriously I don't have the power to fight you right now".

She chuckled."You know what Jon McClain this is the very same reason why I didn't to be in a relationship with you.I knew myself,I knew that when I love someone, I love wholeheartedly and when I invest in a relationship I give it my all.You have been busy almost the whole week and we didn't have time together we only got the opportunity yesterday and what did you do,you came in

carrying a girl in your arms and you expected me to act mature about it. Have you taken a moment to put yourself in my shoes. Let's say you have prepared a romantic dinner for me and you're wearing nothing but briefs then a man walks in carrying me in their arms, how were you going to handle it without having to look like an insecure and jealousy boyfriend. On top of that Jon you left early in the morning without leaving me a note or anything but just an order for the chefs to prepare a delicious breakfast for me that I was going to eat alone. I woke up expecting us to make love but no I had to drag my horny self to the bathroom and eat all the delicious breakfast alone. You didn't even do the courtesy of calling and telling me where you were. Yes you might have had important errands to run but couldn't you spare a little time for us or couldn't you at least wake me up give me a quickie and then run your errands. You might say I'm nagging, insecure and punishing you for my past relationships but Jon are you investing your all? Are you ready for this or you need to get your shit together first?"

I swear women have this talent called #let me make him feel guilty today. Ruth really made me feel guilty and I realized how wrong I was.

I sighed without knowing what to say.

She smiled. "You know where to find me if you need me my love."

She baby kissed me and left.

I sat down. Do I really suck in this relationship thing.

Ruth really didn't deserve all of this. She has gone through a lot and instead of proving to be the worst guy than the previous guys she dated I should show her that I can do better than them.

Well anyway I needed to blow off some steam before deciding on how to make it up to Ruth so as always I had to meet the guys. After all I had issues to discuss with them. So I didn't waste time I drove to Max's house. You must be wondering why we never go to work. Well we are our own bosses so we just go to work when there is an important issue to tackle.

Well I arrived at Max's place but and as usual they were just talking Lewis drinking beer. I swear this one drinks like a fish but doesn't easily get drunk.

"Wassup assholes." I said going to the kitchen and taking some juice.

"Fucker, come sit down who has been keeping you away from us" Lewis said and bubbly as always.

"Obviously that sissy Ruth." Max frowned.

I smacked his head."Leave my girl alone.So what did I miss?".

Gareth laughed."Well yours truly Lewis Jackson did a number on Max".

I sat down."And what is that?"I said sipping on my juice.

"You remember the lunch they went to.Lewis announced that Max is in a serious relationship with some girl and he is even planning to marry her.He went on to say they have been together for five years now Mrs Jackson is ecstatic about it and here we are not knowing what to do because Max here is famously single."

I laughed."Serves him right for keeping things from us.For all we know the girl might even be there but we are in the dark ".

Max sighed." Man I didn't wanna tell you about my sterility because my ego was at stake.Come on guys I thought you would treat me differently".

Lewis scoffed."You thought even I would treat you differently because you shoot water really Max".

At times Lewis can just offend you but because its Lewis you just have to understand. His offense might be his way of comforting.Pretty weird if you ask me.

Anyway Max sighed."You see what I'm talking about,already he is saying I shoot water.Anyway guys I'm sorry ok."

"Its understable we cool about it."

I shoulder bumped Max.

"So what are you gonna do with this new situation that Lewis created for you?" I asked.

"I don't know and I can't disappoint mom again. She has great expectations from us." He said.

" Fake it till you make it bro. A fake girl will do here" Lewis shrugged. I laughed looking at these two. Yes they are twins they have similarities like the eye and hair colour but they are their own individuals. Lewis's character and his preferences is totally different from Max's.

"Ahhh let's drop this, will cross the bridge when we get there. Anyway Jon how is you, Joss and Danger?" Max asked.

I shook my head."I don't know how to say this but I found someone who can control Danger".

Lewis choked on his beer,Max chuckled and Gareth just jawdropped.

"You kidding right.I mean who can control that monster.Well no offense but we all know he is a monster".

Lewis said

" April can control him"I said looking serious.

Lewis scoffed."You mean the delivery girl,the girl you ran over,the girl who came with the other girls,the girl--"

I interrupted. "Do you perhaps know another April I don't know about?I mean her exactly her"

Max was surprised."I knew she was capable, that girl is kinda Dangerous. How did you find out about this?"

"Yesterday around 6,I had an appointment with Doctor Gomez,apparently it was to discuss when I would start my sessions. On my way I saw two guys manhandling a girl.I pretended like I didn't see anything but later came back for them,that's when I realized that the girl was April. One of them punched me and I hurt my head.That's when Danger took over.As always I don't know what happened but I later took control without having to pass out again.That's when I saw two bulky man on the ground.I thought Danger killed them because we all know he usually does and he doesn't leave anything incomplete.

April then told me that she stopped me before I could kill them.On top of that Danger even told April to call him Dee.I don't know what he is playing at."

Max shook his head and sighed."This is really bad Jon.Yes you might be lucky that Danger found someone who can control him but I read some few things about DID.On the first stage alter egos take control only if the body passes out or is in panic mode.On the second stage alter egos take control anytime without the body having to pass out,they can switch whenever they feel like it and the last stage is when the owner of the body can reach the extent of talking to his alter egos even through the mirror.Like you Jon you will talk to Danger through the mirror, your reflection on the mirror will be Danger's or Joss's and it will only be in your head.That's the last stage where you will be mentally unstable. This is not good at all bro.You need to start taking your sessions way too seriously.I'm even surprised that you haven't started your sessions yet.Anyway I'm just praying that you haven't reached the second stage yet."

I stood up and started pacing up and down."This is really bad".

"Then you need April by your side." Lewis said sipping on his beer.We all looked at him.

"Whaat?! I know what I say always doesn't make sense to you but look Joss is easy to control whereas Danger no one can control that idiot what he says goes,he never listens to anybody, he lives by his own rules but if April can stop him from killing it means she can tame that beast."

I nodded."Yea maybe you're right."

Gareth shook her head."No no guys you can't involve her.She is really innocent in all of this don't involve her in your mess."

"I second you on that. Don't use her she doesn't deserve it." Max said

I sighed. "I'm not using her guys. I will just befriend her. Besides Danger gave her a job as a maid and I will be paying her \$5000 and if in case I fire her I will have to give her a blank cheque. Can you believe Danger did all that and went as far as signing a contract using my signature."

Lewis chuckled. "So he already made things easier for you. Maybe you should befriend her and step by step you will introduce her to your world. She was from a mental asylum so I don't think it will be surprising to her. You never know maybe her mental condition was/is more serious than DID. On that note you should find out why she was in the asylum."

"No I can't invade her privacy like that. She will tell me herself. But I think the idea of befriend her is ok". I said.

" And Ruth will be ok with that?" Gareth asked.

"She doesn't have a choice,she will have to accept her in my life." I said.

Max chuckled. "That's a recipe for disaster".

" I will cross that bridge when I get there.Anyway how do you guys soften a woman when she is angry".I asked.

Lewis raised his eyebrow. "I will give her a good nice fuck.But anyway for you,you should by a gift, jewellery or something with flowers and act all romantic and spend the whole night love making as you say it.Then the following morning give her a morning glory then breakfast in bed".

We all looked at him.Lewis is the number one player,since when did he know how to treat a

woman?

" Don't look at me like that. I have been in many failed relationships so I'm wise now."

"Ok thanks bro for the advice".

I looked at Gareth and he wasn't himself.

" And wassup with you Gareth.You're hardly talking nor laughing today? "

"I thought I was the only one who is seeing things. What's going on Gareth?" Max asked.

He breathed and rubbed his head."Mr Johns is coming back tomorrow".

"Ahhh man that nigger again." Lewis frowned.

Well Mr Jonhs is Gareth's step father although Gareth uses his surname. They don't get along and its very serious however that's not my story to tell.

"Ahhh man you gotta be strong for that one.When you need us we will be there". I said

" Yea right."He said lazily.

"Well guys I have to leave.I have to surprise my woman with late lunch,use all the tips Lewis told me and make it up for her." I stood up.

"Wait uh before you leave.Do you perhaps have umm April's phone number.I need to talk to Jenny so that we can set a date where we will meet and talk." Max said.

Luckily I had speed dialled myself earlier.So I gave him the number."Go easy on the girl bro".

I smiled and he just nodded.

Now I had to make up for Ruth.

Max.

"Thanks for saving my *reputation."*

After the guys left I debated with myself if I should call April or not. I decided against it. I wasn't prepared to talk to Jenny. The following morning I finally decided to call.

I tried three times before anyone answered but when I was about to give up she picked her phone.

"Jenny speaking. April is asleep who is this?" Ohhh God I didn't expect to hear her tiny cute sounding voice. I kept quiet for a while without knowing what to say.

"Ohhh we gonna do the breathing competition until your airtime runs out" She said and you could tell from the tone that this person is feisty.

"Umm hi Jenny its me" I said not knowing the right words to use.

"You who?" She said.

Ohh crap."Its me Max can you give me your number so that I can call you on your phone".

She sighed."Umm let me just text you. Give me a second".

She hung up and after a minute my phone beeped.It was a text from Jenny.

"That's my number".

I called that minute and she answered." Hey".

"Hey". She said as well and there was a moment of silence.

"Umm I wanted us to meet up and talk about the twins". I said.

"Ummm ok just tell me the time and place?" She said softly.

"My place around 1." I said firmly.

She sighed "I thought we were supposed to meet like in public".

" I suppose what happened the other day is not happening again.I just want us to talk as two civilized people not to slap each other".I said firmly.

"Oh okay fine then I will come." She said and hung up.

I shook my head. I wonder goes around in the little mind of that little girl. One minute she is all soft but within a blink she is Chun-Li.

Anyway I blew off some steam in the gym and took a cold bath after. I wore my grey track pants, a black vest and black Nike push-ins. I decided to let my hair loose so it was hanging on my shoulders.

I went downstairs and made myself a cup of coffee.

While my chefs were busy making me proper breakfast I was watching American football.

After they were done I had to ate my breakfast alone.

The big mansion really made me feel lonely without the guys around. Sometimes I would wish I had someone with me who would keep me company but then again maybe some of us were destined to be lonely for the rest of our lives.

After finishing my breakfast, I continued to watch my match.

Around 12 one of the helpers came.

"Sir a lady is here to see you" She said.

Well she is punctual. I thought I said we should meet at one. "Let her in."

She nodded and walked out After a few minutes I heard the door opening.

"You're here so early I thought I said we should meet at one".

I said with my eyes fixed on the TV.

" Expecting someone?"

A voice startled me.

"Eve what the hell are you doing here." I asked with shock written all over my face. Where the hell did she even get my address. On top of that she and her family live in Texas.

"Pleased to see me". She catwalked and kissed my cheek then sat down.

" I asked you a question".I said maintaining a straight face.

" I was doing business here in Georgia so I thought I should pass by and see how you are doing.Besides its for old times sake"She said sitting leg crossed revealing her golden tan legs.She was wearing a body hugging red short dress and red bottom heels.I looked away because the last thing I wanted was to be tempted by the woman sitting opposite me,after all she knew which buttons to press.

"As you can see,I'm perfectly fine.Now will you leave I have things to do." I said rudely.

"Where is the hospitality Max.?" She said rolling her eyes.

"You just showed up at my house unannounced now you're demanding hospitality. You

shouldn't be here to begin with ain't you supposed to be nursing your baby right now". I said firmly.

She came and sat besides me." I...I know ..I was wrong to have...chosen Saul over you..b-but its never too late my love..okay..I ..I will make things right...I will end things with Saul.When I saw you back on the family lunch day..w-when Lewis announced that you had a girlfriend that's when I realized that I want you in my life.I have been thinking about you all these years and I regret what I have done.I...I should have fought for us ...my love...I was just young and I thought that if I had refused dad he was going to abandon me since I am an adopted child b-but now my love I can stand my ground....My love I will-"

I stood up vigorously. "Are you kidding me right now.Are you fucken kidding me Eve.Its been 9years.. Damn 9 years now you're telling me this shit..are you a psycho.Get out of my house now.What has gotten into you,are you on drugs".

She cupped my face." Come on babe its me your Eve.Look I even removed my wedding ring.I will talk to my lawyer to draft some divorce papers ok.I have lost you once because of my foolishness but now i refuse to loose you again.I love you,I never stopped."She said.

I roughly removed her hands.

Before I could give her a piece of my mind the door opened and Jenny walked in.

This was the only chance to get Eve off my back. "Babe".

I said smiling at Jenny.

I walked faster towards her, before she could guess what I intended to do, I moved with surprising swiftness covering her tiny waist with my hands and held her captive. I bended my head over hers the same half beat of time that she lifted her face towards me in irritable surprise.

"Ma---". She could not go any further than the first letters of my name before my mouth was covering hers.

I completely understood her unprepared reaction. Even I wasn't prepared for this I just had to do what first came into mind.

And kissing Jenny is the first thing that came to mind. Remember those lips are the same lips that said shit about you. My conscience reprimanded.

I felt her lips soften against mine. I secretly smirked, so I still had my game on.

Anyway she stiffened and softly pushed me.

I whispered into her ear. " Don't get this the wrong way, I'm begging you to just play along."

She just nodded without saying a word. Well its kinda difficult to resist the Max charm.

I held her waist and walked to Eve.

Eve frowned. "You must be thee famous girlfriend. I must say you're way below Max's league no wonder he kept you a secret for five long years."

Jenny folded her arms and raised her eyebrows. "And you must be that bitter bitch that I will never like and what the hell are you doing in my man's house looking like a hooker with the whole make-up kit on your face?"

Ok I wasn't ready to witness a cat fight. I know Eve was never good in fighting anyway but Jenny well she slapped me before and that sent a message.

"Babe relax ok. This is Eve my cousin and Eve this is Jenny my girlfriend". I said.

Jenny frowned." To hell with this cousin thingy you two probably fucked right?"

Ok how did she know? Was it written over my face.

"And I'm here to claim what's mine bitch,your time is over." Eve said acting all ratchet

Jenny ignored her and walked to the kitchen.She later came back with a frying pan.

"Other than cooking this can do a lot of things including panel beating that Barbie looking face of yours.Now if you still value your life and if you still want to walk out of here in one piece,you will not say a word but disappear before I show you my psycho side.Apart from knowing that I'm his "below the league" girlfriend you should know that I don't take bull from anyone especially cousins who are obsessed with my man's dick.I can go all ghetto on those fake lashes and silicone filled ass.Don't try me.Now leave with the little dignity that you still have.You're lucky I didn't wake up on the wrong side of the bed or else I could have showed you how we deal with spoilt brats like you and I doubt you will be able to handle my ghetto psycho side, so please Miss Feeling Myself disappear.Vanish right this moment before I even blink." She said with a straight face.Eve didn't wait any second,she left immediately because the look on Jenny's face

would scare the shit out of anyone.

She held her waist and looked at me."Now care to explain.I came here expecting us to talk like civilized people not for me to deal with Barbie looking bitches".

"Umm can you put the frying pan away". Maybe we should have met in a public area the last thing I want is her going all Chun-Li on me with frying pans God knows what else she uses.

She placed the pan away and looked at me.

" Okay I'm sorry for dragging you into my mess and I'm sorry for kissing you,I just had to do it to prove a point. Now can we sit down and talk about the twins please."

She scoffed."Before we go thereYour cousin Max,you fuck your cousins.Its your business I know but I'm curious ".

I sighed." She is not really my cousin. Anyway its a long story.Let's talk about the twins,now can we".

She just chuckled and sat down then sighed.

"I was 17 when mom was diagnosed of cancer and died.I was left with my two siblings and I had to do everything in my power to take care of them. I needed quick cash,so I had to hustle.I did what I did for my two siblings and long the way I lost my sanity.I'm not telling you this so that you can pity me Mr Jackson but I'm telling you as a sister who loves her siblings too bits.I know on our fist encounter I really acted out of it and I apologize. I don't blame my behavior on anyone but myself. I still had lot of anger in me.I'm angry because my mom left me in a situation like this,I'm angry because death snatched away my mom when I needed her the most,I'm angry because I don't have enough money to take care of my siblings, I'm angry because of the wrong choices that I made in my life just so I can put food on the table,I'm angry because I'm here having to explain myself right now so that I can make you understand,so that I can try and stop you from separating me and my siblings.I have nothing Mr Jackson,I have nothing to offer them..I only have my love for them.Right now if you're to take this matter to the court I have already lost because apart from you having connections,I still have a lot of shit in my life,I still have to get my life back together so that I can claim them."

She cried.

I softly rubbed her back."I'm not really that evil Jenny.I would never be able to separate siblings ok.I might have said a lot of shit the other day but it's because what you said had hurt my feelings and I said a lot of things in anger but I never meant any of that.

Adoption has always been on my mind for years because of my own personal reasons. So this other day I went to HolyCross orphanage because I had finally decided to adopt. I didn't want to adopt a newborn well because I don't have a partner and I wanted to adopt a kid who goes to school. So I was taken to the kid's playing ground that's when I saw the twins building a sand castle just the two of them. The sight reminded me a lot about my childhood days with Lewis. I fell in love with them then I went over to talk to them. The more we talked I could feel that the feeling was mutual. They loved me too. Days went by I would see them every weekend. Then I realized that in every conversation they talked about you. I did a little digging and found out you were in a mental asylum. I couldn't adopt them, I didn't want to without your approval. I also wanted you to be forever part of their lives because I know how much you mean to them. Jenny I love Justin and Joyce so much and I have made so much plans for them. You know what, come with me I need to show you something".

I held her hand and led the way.

End of chapter1 6

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 7

Max.

"The final decision".

She covered her mouth and tears started to slowly fall down.

"Ohhhh my God this is beautiful. I have never seen anything like this in real life. I always see it in the movies."

"Now will you stop crying already. Joyce and Justin are twins but they are their on individual just like me and Lewis. So by visiting frequently, I realized that Joyce loves sandcastles. So I looked for an expert to build this for me, that's how I came about it."

I smiled looking at the big sandcastle on my backyard. The one who built it spent like a week working on it.

"Its so big. Joyce is going to love this!" She exclaimed.

"Come I will show you what I made for Justin". I said.

She sighed. "I wonder what it is".

I just smiled and held her hand again leading her to my backyard garden.

"Ohh my God a tree house...!" She exclaimed again.

"You wanna go in?" I asked.

She shook her head vigorously. "No we will fall and besides I'm afraid of heights."

I laughed. "We will not fall and besides its big to accommodate adults and also the wood used is very strong."

"But Maaax".. She said.

"Come on you will not fall.I'm right here I won't let you fall."I managed to convince her.

"Now all you have to do is to climb that ladder.You don't have to look down ok".

" Ok but you promise to catch me if I fall".She said.

"Trust me you won't fall.When you're up there don't look down ok".

She strongly gripped the ladder.I touched her tiny hands and kept hold of them so that her hands were resting close to the warmth of mine.

" Relax I'm here ok."I said softly and she nodded and started climbing.

After a few minutes she was standing on the tree house's balcony like imitation.

I started climbing too.

"Ohhh my God I did it".She said excitedly.

I sat beside her." You know as a child I hated tree houses but now I know what I missed.Wow there is a lot of toys in there.Justin will love this.How did you do this?".She beamed in excitement.

"Its not my work.Professionals did this.And from here you can watch the sun setting, its a beautiful view." I said smiling.

We kept quiet for a while and it was getting really uncomfortable. You could even slice the

tension with a knife.

She smiled but not with the same excitement as before."So you did all this for them.Its a pity ...I...I can't offer all of this for them..I couldn't even get a Joyce just a sandbox but you made sure that you will surprise her with a very big sandcastle... L-life is so unfair sometimes ".

I sighed and looked at her." Someone in a fit of rage once said to me money cannot buy you happiness,you said that to me and its true. I might be able to build sandcastles and tree houses for them,give them the best that money can buy but if they may come a situation where the twins are asked to choose between me and my money then you and your love.They will choose you.You know why ...well its because one,blood is thicker than water and two,your love for them overcomes my money.Even if I may snatch them away from you and give them a luxurious life.They will sleep on kingbeds and go to school in a Lamborghini but they will still ask "Daddy where is sister Jenny". In as much as I love them and can give them a good life,its all nothing compared to the love you have for them and the sacrifices you make just so that they can have a good life.

Look I always hoped that when you're out of the asylum you would understand and allow me to live with the twins but since I know you love them so much Jenny I'm dropping this case.I will stop the adoption and you can have your siblings. I will just help you financially so that they don't have to suffer when they out of the orphanage. God knows I love them but I will try and move on without them".

She laughed. I looked at her with confusion. "You're crying again. Man don't cry".

"No I'm not." I defended looking away.

She laughed and her eyes lit. "Ohh my look here, they are tears. Come on my big baby let mama wipe the tears off". She said cutely pouting her lips. I laughed.

"I now realise that you love them a lot Max. I don't wanna take that away from you. Continue with the adoption process but I want to be included in every step. I want to be part of their lives forever." She said.

I couldn't contain my excitement. "Ohhh my God thank you so much Jenny." I gave her brief nonsexual courtesy kisses on her cheek repeatedly.

She laughed." Ok ok stop with the kisses already. I have got enough for one day ".

I looked at her and smiled." You're hard to read Jenny you know that.You're a complicated maze.One minute you're fragile,the next minute you're sweet and in a blink you're Chun-Li".

She laughed revealing a perfect set of teeth."Really Chun-Li now.If I am Chun-Li then April will be Jackie Chan".

I laughed too because the sound of her laughter was contagious."How so.Is April even worse than you"

"She is worse. She is good in martial arts and boxing, she is a kickass, she used to train back at the mental asylum with the provided facilities. She protected us back at the asylum. Guards there had a tendency of raping patients but April would knock them off. She ruled the asylum, they feared her. Every week it was very normal for her to be either electrocuted or spend a night or a day in the isolation cell. But it's hard to believe it because she is soft on the outside. She is so cool but if you press her wrong buttons then you will lose your front teeth. If it wasn't for the fact that she is injured I'm hundred percent sure that she was going to fight those guys who tried to abduct her." She said.

"So you guys have been together for long?" I asked.

"Yes for a year and a few months now but we are very tight it's like we have known each other for long. Each of us have different characters but that's how we compliment each other... Nicki--"

She started telling me stories about their days in the asylum although she didn't tell me what they were diagnosed with, she made it sound like living at the asylum is a normal thing. By the time she was done talking I was tired of laughing, I have never laughed that much before. People always said that I'm serious and never take a joke but with Jenny it seems as if she was pressing my laughter buttons especially with the stories of what Nicki used to do back at the asylum. From the stories she told me I could finally conclude that Nicki is the drama queen, Kiara is the caring mother, well Jenny is the loud mouth not in a bad way and April is the cool, unpredictable and sort of dangerous. I also got to know that April and Danger first met when they sneaked out of the asylum.

I shook my head laughing. "You guys were a handful".

She chuckled. " Tell me something I don't know".

I checked the time and realised that we have sent like two hours in the tree hours.

I smiled." So anyway have you ever went to see the twins?"I asked.

"No the orphanage didn't allow me in back then when I tried so I'm pretty sure they will not allow me". She said sadly.

" You know what let's go right now.You need to see them they are grown now".

I said climbing down. I waited for her to come down as well.

Gareth

"Thee perfect father"

I picked up my phone as it was ringing non-stop.

"Moom hello". I said lazily.

" Gareth your dad is expecting you this afternoon, in fact he was expecting you here yesterday what are you still doing in Georgia".She didn't even ask how I was doing.

"Point of correction step dad not dad.I'm coming mom,I'm on my way,will you tell your husband that I will be there like in an hour or so." I hung up without having to wait for her to scream at me.

"Please drive a little bit faster." I informed my chauffeur and he just nodded.

I really wasn't looking up to see Mr Johns,there is serious bad blood between us and its not even funny.The only reason why I was going to that house was because of my mom.

Otherwise I didn't want to. That man she calls her husband irks me,disgust me,he gets on my nerves and on top of that he knows I'm an unexploded bomb but he keeps on ticking me off.I used to be his perfect only son,his golden child,his pride but it all ended when I was involved in an accident,I had fallen off the balcony. Apparently I had lost a lot of blood,so as a father he had to step in, that's when the truth came out that I wasn't his son.Mom had pinned the pregnancy on him.I was 13 when my life became a living horror.

He hated me,he vented his anger on me in many disgusting unacceptable ways.Mom didn't leave him because she wanted to make sure I had a good life.Also she knew that Mr Jonhs as a mayor and businessman with dirty laundry he would definitely make our lives miserable but already he was making my life miseralfife

I dragged my thoughts to reality when my chauffeur was asking me to scan my fingerprint on the gate. I scanned them and he drove inside the big yard.

After five minutes I was at the front door.

I sighed and scanned my prints again, then the door automatically opened. The house brought thousands of bitter memories, the more I stepped in the more I felt my soul dying million deaths.

Mom saw me and she became ecstatic. Mr Jonhs was reading a newspaper he just briefly peeped over it and continued reading.

"Moom". I said hugging her tightly.

"Ohhh my Gareth I missed you so much" She said kissing me all over the face.

I looked at the old man sitting on the expensive couch." Mr Jonhs". I said

He looked at me with an evil smirk. "Mr Johns Jnr. I was just reading about you". He said folding the paper and throwing it on the table.

Mom sensed the tension between us. "Ohh Gareth dear you must be exhausted please go upstairs and freshen up then join us for a late lunch." She said.

I frowned thinking about the room upstairs. I preferred to freshen up in one of the guestrooms. After I was done, I went and joined them on the boring late lunch. We had to abide by the table rules, so only the folks and knives made the noise.

At times like this I miss my guys, Lewis could have been dancing on top of the table with Jon cheering him on.

Mr Johns stopped eating. "Mr Connelly's son Sebastian got married last week. It was really a great wedding indeed. Her wife is from a very respectable family".

So what old man,who cares about that.My inner voice screamed.

No one commented, he continued eating without saying a thing.

He then stopped again.

"Its a good policy for an ambitious young businessman as well as the mayor's "son" like you Gareth to have a kind of marriage which is carefully organized and businesslike political patnership,a marriage where it is automatically acknowledged that your work and the reputation of this family comes first."The analytical controlling side of this old man was starting to show now.

I lost my appetite and wiped my mouth with a napkin.

"I'm my own man,I know exactly the kind of marriage I have in mind.Don't interfere,this ain't one of your dirty business deals nor is it a political issue". I said firmly.

He laughed sarcastically." What kind of a marriage would that be because the last time I checked you don't even have a girlfriend and even if you happen to have one,you need my approval."

I stood up in anger. "You're not going to control my life Sam Johns you hear. My life my rules. I will be damned to see you ruin my life even more because you've done enough" I said firmly.

Mom tried to calm me down. "Gareth this is your father respect him."

I shouted. "No mom no ..not again. He is not my father and everyone in here knows that. I'm tired of him controlling my life like I'm some robot. I had to do business because he wanted me to. I had to study politics because he wanted me to, now he wants to choose the kind of marriage need automatically that means he will be choosing a wife for me. I'm not letting that happen".

He stood up calmly. "Kelly you spoil this boy too much. I will be in my study. Knock some senses into his head." He disappeared upstairs.

"What is wrong with you Gareth,he is doing all this for you.He wants the best for you". Mom screamed.

I was agitated." The best for me you say...He wants the best for me..him? Are you seriously kidding me right now. He has been controlling my life as long as I remember and you say that's the best for me.Do I look like a 13 year old boy to you?I'm 29 years old mom for crying out loud. I don't get why he badly wants to mold me into a perfect son I'm not his son."

She slapped me."He made you to be who you're today.Even after knowing that you're not his son he still didn't throw us out he took care of us.You're who you're today thanks to him or else you could have been nothing my son. We could have been on the streets".

I bitterly sighed."You're right about one thing mom,he made me who I am today.He made me hate myself mom because of the things that he did to me,he crushed me,he destroyed my self esteem but you're too blind to see that.You don't have the slightest idea of what he did that's why you're this blind.You think letting us stay here after knowing the truth about me was out of the goodness of his heart huh?Well he did it to save his reputation,to save his political position, he did it because he used to show you off like a trophy wife that's why the truth about my identity was never disclosed.He wanted to save his selfish ass.I don't know what you see from that filthy selfish bastard you call a husband. I'm leaving, I can't stay for another second here or I

will puke".I stormed out because I couldn't take it anymore.

I gave my chauffeur money to call an uber then took my car.I needed to be alone.

Within 30 mins I was back in Georgia.

I drove to downtown and decided to go to the famous Italia restaurant Lewis always talks about.

I parked my car abd people were just giving me the looks like I was an alien or something. I walked into the restaurant, luckily they were a very few people inside.

I found a table at the corner and sat down. I covered my face with my hands and sighed. This was too much now,it had to stop.

"Good afternoon sir how can I help you.?" A voice startled me and it sounded so familiar.

I looked up and her eyes met mine.She was wearing a yellow dress with a white apron and was holding a tiny notebook and a pen.

I laughed like really laughed. "And you just had show up at a time like this.God how can one's face be this mixed up".

It was non other than Kiara.Well how can I forget her,especially the cute little frown she makes each time I offend her.

She frowned again. "How can I help you Gareth?" She said sounding annoyed.

I looked the other way. "I don't know how you can help me."

She came close to my face. "Who did this to you. Your cheek is so red and swollen".

I touched my cheek and remembered mom's slap.

"Give me a second I will be back". She walked away leaving me in my own thoughts.

She came back minutes after with a bowl which had water and a napkin in it.

" Let me take a look at it."She said holding my cheek.

"Wow this looks pretty bad.Whoever did this knew what they were doing".

She said gently wiping my cheek with a napkin which was soaked in warm water.

I hissed as I felt a stinging sensation.." Sorry they probably slapped you with a ring on so you have a bruise and I also added a little bit of salt,no wonder it's stinging."

She said.

Now a few people that were in the restaurant were looking at us.

"Ain't you supposed to be taking care of the customers ?" I asked.

"Its already my knock off time.My shift just ended" She said handing me a packet of frozen peas.
"Place that on your cheek,it will reduce the swelling.You also need an ointment for the red eye".

" Thank you so much"I said.

She smiled and sat down. "Care to talk about it, I'm a very good listener you know".

I sighed." No I'm cool umm everything is fine".

She looked right into my eyes.She has those beautiful big brown eyes,those kind of eyes which you feel like they are starring into your soul.She whispered."You're lying".

I sighed and looked away breaking the eye contact.

We sat there in comfortable silence.

Then she said."A problem shared is a problem solved.I promise not to judge".

I chuckled."To the world I'm my father's son but in reality I'm not his son at all. Im Mr John's step son".

I tensed waiting for her to gasp,to be shocked,to be jaw dropped, to look at me with the eyes that say "so you're an illegitimate son" but I got none of the reaction I expected. Instead she held my hand softly rubbed it assuring that she was still listening.

"Anyway to cut the long story short.We never got along after he found out that I was not his biological son.He controlled my life,did a lot of things to me and right now I feel like I'm about to explode.I have been strong for 16 years now keeping up with his shit but now I have reached my breaking point. I just can't take it anymore." I breathed heavily.

She held my hand."Come on you need some air".

"Where are we going?" I asked.

"Relax I'm not kidnapping you.I just feel like you need some air, you need a breather.Already its clear that you're hardly sleeping because the eyebags are visible.And if someone is hardly sleeping it means they are not eating well too.We are taking a stroll ok,there is this area where there is fresh breeze" She said leading the way as we walked out of the restaurant.

We walked a distance in comfortable silence.

Then she looked at me and sighed."There was a time in my life where I bottled things up and never wanted to confide in anyone its not healthy Gareth.Its written all over your face that there is so much than to what you're letting out.You don't have to put on a poker face because you're afraid people will judge you.You don't have to put on a plastic smile because you don't want

people to worry about you. I'm not saying show everyone that you're sad but don't pretend rather be with someone who you can confide in and if there is none then do something that keeps your mind off things. Don't sweep things under the carpet because it's not healthy at all, you will end up feeling like you should run away from your own thoughts. I have been there trust me".

Her words were like that soothing medicine I needed I felt less burdened. When I first met her I honestly never guessed that she would say such comforting words.

I looked at her and she looked back at me. I laughed. "Gosh don't look at me like that you got big brown beautiful eyes and they are soo intimidating."

She laughed. "I thought you said I'm ugly, you made me feel like there is nothing beautiful on my face but Lord God bigger was busy checking me out"

I laughed. "You wish I was checking you out. But anyway thanks so much I feel less burdened you're really good with words."

She smiled. "I'm always here when you wanna talk ok. I also know that the fact that you're an illegitimate child is something that shouldn't be disclosed. I will keep it that way".

Saul

"In a jail made of golden bars".

Just like any other day I had to wait for my wife while shushing Alina. The nunny had long gone home since her shift had ended at 6. Now Eve wasn't home yet and Alina was crying non stop.

She was 6 months for crying out loud she needed her mother by her side but then this is Eve works come first. Her career is important.

I had bathed and feed Alina but the girl needed her mother. I sat down not knowing what to do anymore.

I dragged my thoughts 9 years back. I was just a 22 year old ambitious lawyer with a very poor background and didn't have a luxurious life to offer my family who badly needed the high lifestyle. I met Mr Kenneth Jackson because apparently I was assigned to fight his son Kenneth Jnr's assault case. I won the case fortunately and he came to me with an offer. He asked me to marry Eve because she was a very stubborn child and very spoiled. I refused pointblank but he went to my family and offered the proposal and with the greedy family I had they agreed. I didn't give a choice than to marry Eve and already she was pregnant with Max's child. I asked her to keep the child but Eve being stubborn she aborted. It wasn't easy to live with Eve but I grew to love her stubbornness because that's who she is. Slowly the feeling became mutual.

However once again it was hard to convince her to have a child because her modelling career would be affected. After nine long years she finally agreed and that's how we got our beautiful Alina. But after Ali was conceived Eve became more hard and even went as far as refusing to breastfeed the baby saying that it would make her boobs saggy.

She became distant and rarely wants to have sex with me but because it's Eve you would never know she might be going through something.

I got back to the present because of the door which was slammed. Alina had finally drifted to lalaland but because of the noise she woke up and started crying.

Eve walked in and threw herself on the couch.

"Get her to her room she is making a lot of noise" She demanded.

I started shushing her and thanks to the pacifier she drifted off to sleep again. I went upstairs and placed her in her cotbed.

I found Eve in the kitchen eating her late dinner.

"It's 9pm Eve where were you. Do you even know that you're a mother". I said firmly.

" Please don't frustrate me I had a very long day." She hissed.

"Trying to knock some sense into your head is frustrating you now. Eve do you realize that you're being immature right now" I shouted.

She sniffed. " I think I have to call my dad. What's wrong with you Saul. It's just a baby ok, I have work to do she got a nanny. Should I be a housewife because I agreed to give birth to your child. I don't think daddy would want to hear that you're trying to force me to put my career on hold because of your selfishness. "

As always if we have an issue she crawls back to her daddy and daddy will fight her battles.

I sighed.

"Its my bad,I'm sorry babe ok."

I went to our room and sat on the balcony.

I heard her coming in and going to the shower.I then had an instant boner.

Its been long since I felt my wife's warm cookie.

No-brainer.Men need sex.We love it.Ain't nothing on this planet like it,nothing else we want that bad on continuous daily basis nothing else.Speaking for myself I simply cannot live without it.Take my house,take my job but please don't hold out on to the cookie.I need the cookie.I need to be physically engaged with the woman I love.I connect with my woman during the act,I plug in and recharge. Don't play me short in that area.Unfortunately Eve had been holding out in to the cookie,she has been depriving me.

Anyway I heard her coming out of the shower and after a while the TV was switched on.She was binge watching The Kardashians.I swear if I could,I would definitely sue that family, my wife was so obsessed.

I went very to the bed and gently tapped her shoulder for attention.

She frowned. "I had to hit the road to work, gone to battle with my coworkers and boss around for eight hours with nothing but an inadequate unsatisfying fifteen minutes lunch. I finally knocked off and drop into bed exhausted and I'm halfway through my favourite show, I just wanna zone out and here you are with a shoulder tap, asking for sex. Its just annoying Saul. I'm fucken tired". She said.

I breathed heavily. "I'm tired too of the shoulder tap Eve. I had worked all day just as much as you did or even more but I was hoping that when I get home I will work with you in bed a little longer because I'm forever busy, I got a company to run, I got a schedule to keep. I'm on the run too. But I never want to deprive your sexual needs because I appear to be workaholic. Like how you need to wind down from your day by watching your favourite show. I also need to wind down by making love to my woman. You're always tired of having sex with me and im also tired of not having sex with you. Lord knows I have tried to get you motivated to give me the cookie, from romantic dinners to everything humanly possible and you're still coming up with reasons why you can't just be intimate with me. Since Ali was born I just ate my cookie twice and you were drunk on both occasions. Look I'm not some animal but you're depriving me here and its not fair".

I grabbed my jacket and walked the door.

" Where are you going?" She asked.

"While you unwind to your favourite show,I will unwind out of the house". I said firmly.

"Please babe stop" She said.

End of chapter1 7

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter1 8

April.

"Yes sir".

I was sitting with Nicki in the lounge and she was busy blabbering as always non stop but I was dead worried. Kiara and Jenny were not yet back home and it was past eight already.

"Are you even listening to me". Nicki asked sounding annoyed.

" Sorry what were you saying?". I asked looking at her.

She frowned. "I don't get why you're so worried about Jon that you're not even listening to me".

I laughed."No I'm not thinking about Jon, why should I?I'm worried about Kiara and Jenny.Their cells are switched off and they have never been this late".

She furrowed her forehead."They are probably getting laid why should you be so worried."

Before I could reply her someone rang the bell.Nicki went to open since I was injured.

She came in with Jenny and Max.Okaay,I didn't see this one coming.

I folded my arms looking at Jenny.She gave me a puppy smile,that one which soothes me.

"I know I probably got you worried.We lost track of time".

I just smiled shaking my head." Sorry for being I'll mannered.Max please feel at home.What can I offer you coffee,juice or water?"

"Ohhh umm I'm not staying I just came to drop her off.I will be leaving now. You guys sleep well okay". Max said ready to leave.

Nicki blocked his way." Did you guys at least used protection."Her intention was to whisper only to Max but well Nicki is Nicki we all heard it.

I have to say this I have never seen a guy blush before but im certain I saw Max's face flushing. I don't know what call that.

Anyway he chuckled." Jenny and I didn't engage into anything like that we were at the orphanage, seeing the twins ".

" Ohh okay I will believe it for now but I'm certain something happened between you guys.Its just a hunch,I don't have evidence yet."Nicki said looking very closely at Jenny.

Max just cleared his throat."Ummm I will leave now".

He walked to the door and when he was about to open,the bell rang again.

He opened it Gareth and Kiara walked in.

I didn't see this one coming either.

Nicki folded her arms. "Wonders shall never end". She said shaking her head.

Max and Gareth looked at each other like they were communicating with their eyes and then they shoulder bumped. Okay.

" Umm hello guys I just came to drop Kiki off".Gareth said.

"Kiki!!!" Nicki and I exclaimed at once.

"She already got a pet name,man and when did all this happen because the last time I checked you guys were at each other's throat,ready to murder each other?" Nicki asked

Gareth just smiled."I just wanted to get into her nerves otherwise I never meant any of the things I said to her.Anyway umm we will leave. Good night and Kiki I will text you.Bye".

Max and Gareth walked out.

I clapped my hands and laughed."Out with it girls what did we miss.Jenny you go first?"

She laughed,blushing in process."Well Max and I came to an understanding. He is adopting the twins and I will be allowed to see them. We went to the orphanage today and it was hard guys for me to just walk over to the twins and say I'm back.Max had to do a lot of convincing and finally I gathered the courage to walk over to them.They were so happy to see me and they love Max guys.I'm so delighted that finally this thing that has been stressing me is finally going to be settled."She smiled.

Nicki raised her eyebrows. "Yes you're happy but I can't help but think that there is something you're not telling us."

"I second you on that Nicki". I said.

Jenny couldn't blushing." Well Max kissed me".

My eyes popped. "Say what now..you did what...how ...why ...damn you guys...Okay I didn't see that one coming."

She chuckled. "He didn't do it because he wanted to though. He just water to prove a point,he wanted to spite some girl."

"And how did you feel about that." I asked.

"I had butterflies, I have to admit.Look I have been kissed with so many guys out there,I have been touched,I have been disgraced b-but when Max held me and kissed me it felt so right...like everything was falling Intl please and don't know what to think anymore because many thoughts are running in my head right now."

Nicki laughed and clapped. "For the record Max and Lewis are 32 years old and you're 21 years old, I don't know how it works but okay. I never thought I would live to see Jenny blushing".

I realized something was off with Kiara. She was awfully quiet.

"Kiara what's wrong?"

She sighed. "It's Gareth".

Nicki furrowed her forehead. "What did he do now, I didn't think that because he told you you're ugly it will get you this bad."

Kiara just smiled shaking her head. "For the record he told me I have beautiful eyes and he didn't really mean any of what he said".

"Okay we heard that what about Gareth?" I asked.

"I can't help but to feel that something is not right in his life. There is so much to what he is letting out. He walked in today at Italia you could see he was so lost and he was worried. I feel like something happened in his life, something big very big but I can't put my finger on it. I know it sounds ridiculous, I just met him and already I'm prying into his business but there is this urge, this ache that maybe I should and maybe I can help. We talked today and watched stars together, he really is a great person but he hides so many emotions behind a smile and it's really not healthy." She said.

I sighed. "That's exactly how I feel whenever I'm with Jon. He gives me this vibe you know. There are times when I'm with him and I feel like I'm with someone else and not him. It feels some type of way, I don't know how to explain it but anyway I don't wanna dwell much on that, I have a mission and I don't want anything to disturb me so I will mind my business. However sometimes I wish there wasn't any of these situations, me having to dig into his business

maybe we could have been very good friends. I'm scared though, what if he finds out that I'm going to spy on him. He has been so nice to me but anyway I can't back out now. "

Jenny held my hands. "Maybe I can help, I can be your confidential informant, I can dig out information from Max."

I shook my head. "No no no don't even Jenny you hear me. Things have been finally looking up for you, don't ruin it because you want to help me. In fact none of you should, do you understand? This is my fight and I will fight alone. If I mess up, then it will only be on me ok."

I looked at them and they weren't budging, they can be stubborn if they want to be.

"I said do you understand me girls".

" But you have always been there for us April. At least allow us to help." Jenny said.

"No girls,you will not interfere on this one.I hope I have made myself clear."

I said firmly and they all nodded.

This wasn't going to be any easy task yes but I didn't want to involve them.They were finally getting their lives together.Things were looking up to them.

I looked at Nicki."Anyway Kiara do you buy any chance consider talking to your family?"

She frowned."They abandoned me when I needed them the most. They expelled me from home. You're my family now"

"Fine I won't dwell much on that.Let's go to sleep". I said.

Two weeks later

The past days have been so rocky for me. My girls were mad at me, they really wanted to help but I wasn't going to let them. Well Max and Jenny were seeing each other God knows why sans applies with Gareth and Kiara. As for me and Jon we hardly communicated but we recently talked because he had to take me to the hospital so that the plaster would be removed.

Around 2pm he came to pick me up.

"Jon is here for you". Nicki shouted from the kitchen.

I smiled and looked at myself on the mirror one more time. I never paid attention to my image but today I just felt like I should. I was wearing an above the knees floral cute dress with no shoes on because of the plaster.

Kiara walked in while I was struggling to tie my bulky long hair into a ponytail.

"Hmmm you're looking good but make it quick Jon is already getting impatient.

" I will be fast if you help me tying my hair now" I said.

"Why don't you let it loose." She asked.

"Because I think I look more beautiful with my hair tied." I said.

She laughed. "You're the last person who worried about how they look, care to explain what's happening now." She said tying my hair.

"Nothing is happening." I said smiling, taking my crutches and limping my way to the kitchen.

I found Jon seating on the kitchen chairs busy laughing to Nicki's jokes. I felt some type of way I mean he wasn't talking to me the past days and now he is busy laughing to Nicki's jokes.

Ok what was I thinking its not like he was obliged to talk to me everyday anyway.

"You're looking so cross, what are you thinking". Nicki's voice dragged my thoughts back to reality.

" Ummm its nothing.. " I looked at Jon who was just starring at me.

He stood up and came to me.

" You're looking different but in a good way.However I prefer seeing you with your hair down."

He said removing the ribbon that Kiara had tied my hair with.

"Now that's more like it.Shall we go".

He said.

"Yes sure let's go.I can't wait to get this thing off my leg." I said

He led me to his car and drove off.

On the way we were in uncomfortable silence.

"Umm I'm sorry for not checking on you the past few days I was busy with work and my personal too.I'm sorry really" He said.

I sighed sadly. "Its not like you were obliged to check up on me every now and then. You have a life too".

"But you're in this condition because of me". He said.

I was agitated." Jon are you doing this because you feel guilty and you feel like its your duty or you're doing this because its your humanity. All the care everything you did the other day was it because you're sort of like feel forced to do so".

He stopped the car and looked at me with anger. "Seriously right now, am I that bad to you, do you think I would do that because I feel guilty. Well I did that because I wanted to and I wanted to see you happy. Why do you women always have to be so complicated". He said driving again.

I didn't say anything I just looked out of the window. I didn't understand why I had just snapped earlier.

We arrived at the hospital and went straight to the doctor. They didn't waste time and removed the plaster, then washed my leg. They prescribed some painkillers for me since I was still limping a bit.

After everything was done we went back to the car, we were still not talking.

"Are you ok.?" He asked while focusing on the road.

I rolled. "Is there any reason why I shouldn't be?"

He just chuckled. "Okay umm I'm going to buy some takeaway for our late lunch since its already 3".

I frowned." Just drive me back home I will have a late lunch with my girls."

"Well for the record your girls ain't home.Jenny went with Max to see the twins because they are about to bring them home, Kiara is with Gareth and as for Nicki she is with Lewis as we speak.So there is only one person who can have a late lunch with you and that is me." He said.

"And you have a girlfriend remember" I raised my eyebrow.

"Sooner or later she will have to understand how important you're in my life". He said

" I'm important in your life?"I asked softly.

"Yes you're going to work for me so yes". He drove to some restaurant and bought our takeaways. He started driving to Brussels.

" I thought after this we are going home. I mean you should be dropping me already. Why then are you heading to Brussels.?" I asked

"Since you were agitated earlier thinking that whatever that I was doing, I did it because I felt guilty because I ran you over right now you're fine so I'm going to Brussels with you because I just wanna spend time with you and because I want to and not because I'm obliged to." He glanced at his watch.

"Its almost 5 already, I'm sure it will be a perfect view". He murmured.

I didn't say anything because I was clueless to what he was saying. After about an hour we had reached Brussels cite centre.

He held my hand and led us to where they were a lot of hot air balloons.

" Umm wait here, I have to talk to the manager of this place."He said.

I curiously looked around the place."What are we doing here?"I asked.

"Patience is a virtue April,just know you're going to love this ok". He walked away leaving me on a hang like that.I looked around the place.There was everything, zoos, malls,playing stations. It was really a beautiful place.

Anyway Jon later came back with who I assumed was a manager.He even had two candyfloss with him.I smiled.At least he remembered how much I loved them.

" You must be Miss April,I must say you're very lucky.Please follow me"He said heading to one of the hot air balloons.

I looked at Jon with questioning eyes,he just smiled and gave me one candyfloss.

"Mr McClain you have been here so many times,you never brought any girl.Anyway since you

know how the hot air balloon works I will ask my assistant to light up for you and help you when you guys land." He walked away.

I looked at Jon."A hot air balloon Jon.I have never been up in the sky before I'm sure I will feel lightheaded."

He chuckled."You don't have to worry about that I will be there with you and trust me you won't feel lightheaded. Actually it's a beautiful scene you know,watching the sun setting while up in the sky in a hot air balloon."

He did a lot of convincing and I finally agreed.We went inside the so called assistant lit it. It started flying slowly and I held on to Jon because I was so scared.

"Relax April you won't fall down and just don't look down,focus on the sun which is setting. Its

beautiful aint it?" He asked smiling.

"Not that beautiful especially when I'm scared like this." I said.

He stood behind me and hugged me from behind.

"I'm here ok no need to be afraid short stuff". He chuckled.

I closed my eyes on a deep shudder of intense reaction to his hands that were around my waist. I didn't know what this was, I never felt like this. How would I have felt this way after all I never was so close to a man like this in my entire life. I didn't know this feeling, it felt so right.

"Y-you s-smell so nice." I said. Well it's not like I wanted to say it but my mouth just involuntarily said it.

He let out a deep chuckle."Thank you and you smell so strawberries "

I laughed.At least I was no longer that scared and I must admit watching the sun setting in a hot air balloon was so amazing. We finally landed and it was past six.

"I think its time for us to go now. Do you maybe wanna go to the zoo". He asked.

" No I'm tired.Maybe we should just go".I said.

He drove us home while humming a song all the way.He seemed so happy.

We arrived at my apartment.

"Ummm I'm not staying for long.I have to go." He said.

"Thank you so much about today,I really enjoyed". I said leaning on the door.

He moved closer and I felt my heart beating in my mouth.He bended a little since he was very tall.

"Sleep peacefully short stuff". He winked.

" Short stuff?"I chuckled.

"Yea short stuff". He winked and drove off.

I walked inside smiling.

Jon.

" She makes me happy"

After spending my day with April or should I say short stuff,I drove all the way to my house humming a song.I felt so happy.I had gone to Brussels with my guys so many time but I never enjoyed like I did today.

I was whistling as I opened the door of my house.

I found the guys busy drinking beers as always and Max was drinking his coffee.

"Hey guys". I said.

" Hey man how was your day."Max said as we shoulder bumped.

"I was in Brussels with April". I said smiling.

Gareth gave me a warning look." Lower your voice ".

Before I could ask Ruth catwalked down the stairs and i looked at the guys,they just shrugged.Now I didn't know what to tell her if she starts with her interrogation.

" Hey babe did you win the business deal with the Russians."She smiled.

I looked at my guys and I knew that they had covered for me.

I smiled and played along.

"Well yea I won the deal.How have you been my love". I kissed her and the guys groaned disgustedly.

" Get a room"Gareth shouted.

"This is my house.Anyway babe please go upstairs I will see you there.I have something important to share with the guys".

She smiled and left.

Max gave me a stern look." Brussels with April seriously".

"What's wrong with that?" I asked looking confused.

"I mean she was sad thinking that all I was doing was because I felt guilty I ran her over.I took her to Brussels because I knew she was going to be happy there and her mood was going to be lightened as she see the sun setting."

"You don't even realize it do you?" Max asked and Lewis just shrugged.

"Realize what?" I asked.

"You're falling for April and its not even funny.You're in too deep" Gareth said.

I laughed."is this some kind of a joke because you nearly got me there".

Max raised his eyebrows."I don't think he is joking every one else here can see that too.She is all you talk about,you spend more time when you're with her,its always April this April that,you're worried about her moods and all".

I shook my head vigorously. "You're wrong,I just care about her okay no strings attached,I'm sure she even knows that.I just care,the one that I love is Ruth and she is upstairs waiting for me,that's the woman that I love.You're saying I do this and that for April,I talk this and that about April what about you Max it's always Jenny this Jenny that and Gareth is always Kiki as for Lewis Nicki does that mean you love them.Look April is not even my type I don't go for shorty,curvy women and you all know that.Ruth and I have been doing just fine please don't plant ideas into my head". I was agitated.

Max chuckled." I don't know why you're getting all worked up and defensive but we all know the

truth even though you're trying to deny it. This is going to be every dangerous Jon especially if Danger finds out and ohh what about Ruth. On top of that you're on stage two of DID, these feelings for April are going to ruin everything for you. They are dangerous feelings and its not even funny. "

I threw my favourite flowervase on the wall. "I'm telling you I don't have feelings for her, what's wrong with you guys".

Lewis just chuckled and shook his head. He wasn't himself though, at this point he could have been blabbering non stop but he was just quiet lost in his own world. Normally if he is like this then something will be wrong but I didn't want to pay attention to that. Max was really getting into my nerves.

"Relax man we don't want Danger taking over. Umm guys I think we should go. I'm sure Ruth is waiting impatiently for you" Gareth said, they all stood up and left.

I did my breathing exercise and walked upstairs. I found Ruth wearing nothing. At times like this I

was supposed to act like a hungry lion but I just didn't feel anything at all.

"Babe I'm tired ok. Work has been weighing down on me, I just feel exhausted". I said sitting down and sighing heavily.

She covered herself with a sheet, then knelt beside me.

"Babe where did I go wrong. Am I ... am I pushing you away with my nagging... Babe I'm trying.. I have been trying since you came to me that day after we fought... Where am I going wrong babe please.. I will correct myself ". She started crying.

I hate seeing women vulnerable like this especially because of me." There is nothing wrong with you honey."

"No no babe I can see that something is wrong. Yes we stopped fighting and the reason why I wasn't bringing this up is because I didn't want us to fight but babe I'm not a kid I can see that you're becoming distant. I can feel it that you're slowly drifting away from me. I-is ...t-there maybe

someone else in your lifebabe please don't do this to me...I love you so much...I can't keep on losing people I love please babe,please tell me where I'm going wrong I will correct it". She said crying.

I hugged her and made her sit on my laps." When I first saw you you were arguing passionately about something. I was amazed because it was clear that you were supporting something you believed in,when you were laughing you would throw your head back and it was a perfect view That's the woman I fell in love with,the only woman I will ever love.I love you ok don't doubt yourself ".

I felt like saying this was to convince myself after what Max said to me.

Argggh when did my life become this complicated.

End of chapter1 8

I really tried to make this insert as long as I could but like I said my phone is freezing constantly

and I assume its because I type way too much but don't worry lovie's the problem will be solved soon. Apologies for the typing errors too.

Anyway on our next insert will be focusing on Lewis's story.

Please keep them comments coming they motivate me.

Love y'all.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Lewis.

"Poker face".

Max stared at me as I was quietly going through the channels looking for something interesting to watch.

He stood up and switched the TV off.

"Okay who did you have sex with that didn't appreciate you?" I said with an eyebrow raised.

"This is not the moment for you to be sarcastic. What's going on with you Lewis. You have been awfully quiet, do you think I didn't notice." He said with his arms folded.

I stood up and went to the mini bar to take some white wine.

"Nothing is happening Max you're reading too much into things".

"Ohhh really I'm reading too much into things now. Like you always we are the surviving sperms that night mom and dad yahhh you know what I'm saying, so my point is I know you very well. This poker face you're wearing there I'm not falling for it. Something is not right. I have been feeling depressed for no reason now that I see you I knew its you who is depressed and its affecting me."

I laughed sipping on the wine. "You're being paranoid Max. Nothing is happening with me I'm perfectly fine. I don't understand you though when I talk too much you say "Lewis if you got nothing to say better keep quiet"... And when I'm quiet you start worrying."

He looked at me then furrowed his forehead. "Try again brother. I know you like the back of my hand. So out with it now!" He demanded.

I was irritated. "Out with what you're not my fucking father don't irritate me or raise your voice at me or we will have problems".

He smirked." I got you where I wanted you to be now I'm sure something is wrong.If it was the normal Lewis I know you could have told me to go and get laid so as to blow off some steam,you don't irritated over nothing, something is up".

I sighed and sadly tossed my head."Things are falling into place for you in no time the kids will be running around the place, worry about that ok.I'm not a kid I can handle my own shit trust me".

He shook his head and looked at me sternly."Lewis I don't know what to do if you fall into depression again.I don't wanna loose my twin.Please don't be that Lewis again".

I sighed."I'm not depressed Max ok".

"I can feel it Lewis,you can't deny it you're going back there.... Wait a minute there is only one reason for that....is perhaps.... Is it Zendaya again...Ohhh shit Lewis ...are you thinking about her again.I thought you were over her man.". He stood up and started pacing.

I looked down and started playing with my fingers." I..I ...k-kinda saw someone ...n-not someone... But...but I..I..think its her...I saw her...yesterday.. I couldn't believe my eyes either.After she ghosted me for 3 years..she left me bro then she just shows up in my life like that."

"But I thought you were over her.I thought you understood that what you had was just silly teenage love nothing else". He sat down.

" Look who is saying silly teenage love,we both know you ran around Eve half your life.I have been with that girl for 13 years and I went as far as kneeling on one and she accepted. She just disappeared on me three years ago telling me that I wasn't ready for commitment. God knows that I loved only her,she was my first in everything bro you really can't expect me to just act like I didn't feel anything. Yes I'm angry I need an explanation but I still have hope you know".

Zendaya Cornell was my everything. We dated since I was 17.She is my first love and my first everything. When we first made love we were both clueless about it but we made it work and I

must say I learnt all the sex positions I know now with her. My future was carefully planned with her in it. Like any other relationship things were once or twice rocky but we found our way back to each other. Then when I turned 29 I proposed because I was ready to settle down, I wanted her to finally be Mrs Jackson. She gladly accepted and made me the happiest man on earth. Everyone was happy for us and well you know my mom she had already called a wedding planner from Los Angeles, a designer from Atlanta and a jewellery designer from New York, trust me that's how ecstatic she was.

Things were so fine between Zendaya and I.

So one day I had prepared a romantic dinner for her petals, scented candles and all. We had a blissful night, making love from all corners. I'm not really into cuddling but knowing that it was important for her we cuddled and what not baby kissed and all weird stuff that women love... Like kissing their toes ... seriously that's just weird.

But anyway we did all that, the following morning I woke up expecting to see the love of my life next to me, expecting to give her a very good muff. However to my surprise there was a note and the engagement ring I gave her.

It just read "You're not yet ready for such a big commitment Lewis." I thought it was a prank because Zendaya was really a prankster. I tried her phone it didn't go through, I went to her house and found it empty. I became a mad man in just a blink. I sent a whole searching team, rescuing team you name it but to no avail. Zendaya had just vanished. Knowing that she was from a very rich family I knew she was probably in a jet going somewhere faraway from me, so I gave up. Since my engagement with her was all over the papers, her disappearance became an issue again with the media. For months the issue made it in the headlines and it wasn't easy for me. People were writing things they didn't know and what surprises me is I was painted the bad guy for something I didn't know.

It wasn't an easy road for me I went in and out of depression. I excluded myself from the world. I saw different types of shrinks black, yellow, white, striped, Chinese, American, African but none of them could really help me. How could they help me though, they were never ghosted by someone they loved for 13 years and was ready to marry, they couldn't put themselves into my shoes because they didn't know what I was going through they were just putting their degrees in practical.

My mom was distressed she went as far as having a heart attack and only because of her that I forced myself to move on which we all know didn't happen. Zendaya had destroyed me to such an extent that I can't explain in words but that "stupid in love" part of me was still hoping that she would come back give me an explanation and we would forget everything and start afresh.

Well as for my family and friends they treated me like a ticking bomb, like I was going to explode anytime none of them mentioned Zendaya or anything that started with Z.. none of them pressured me into any marriage or relationship.. No one mentioned my relationship again

because they were afraid I would explode anytime. It literally became a taboo in my family to mention anything to do with my relationship.

I saw how worried they were for me and that too worried me so to ease the tension I started with the poker face. I portrayed emotions on my face that the opposite of what I was feeling inside. It wasn't easy at first but slowly the fake emotions became a part of me. If I could see my family smiling, laughing without having to worry about me, I felt relaxed and a part of me was happy. Happy for them.

I started drinking my life away well alcohol doesn't really solve your problems but it makes the pain numb right, so yea I drank like a fish. They tried to stop me and the media wrote shit about me but they finally got tired and stopped. Max begged me to be normal and I realized that maybe I was being selfish so I minimized my drinking. I became a cheerful, jolly Lewis just so that they wouldn't worry about me. However I could see the stern looks that Max gave me every time we talked about relationship as my twin I knew he was feeling my pain but he was afraid to bring up the issue. Well for the record though I tried to date and failed so many times because the girls were either after cash or dick. I decided to just stop dating and stick to one nightstands well that worked for me. I don't know how many women I slept with and my family became so worried thinking that I would contract some diseases but I'm always careful hence my healthy is a clean bill, squeaky clean.

Anyway yesterday I'm pretty sure I saw Zendaya, how can I forget her though. Everything came to a standstill and all the emotions I had tried so hard to bury came back in a full force.

Max snapped his fingers at me. "You zoned out Lewis... I'm talking to you, should I call dad or a doctor... maybe you should see someone". He said with a worry look.

I smiled at him genuinely. "I'm fine Max you don't have to worry about me. I'm not going back there ok. Stop worrying about me it will make worry as well".

He sighed and gave me a pat on my shoulder." I know what you shared with Zen(Zendaya) was amazing and strong it can never be compared with what I had with Eve but Lewis you have to move on brother,you have to let her go.She is not worth all of this,she is not worth you destroying your life like this but pretending like you got your shit together."

I stopped the tears that were threatening to come out."Maybe there is some logical explanation to everything Max.I remember very well that we were doing just fine.Maybe she was forced to do what she did you never know.Me and Zen were happy together".

"Maybe I should call the guys,they might help me out here".Max suggested.

I shook my head." No don't Max.You know how they are.Gareth will be sick worried and already he is going through a lot.Also the last thing I want is for Jon to worry about me and switch to Joss.I'm not really in the mood to go to exhibitions with his paintings,especially at this hour."

"Fine okay but if this continues I will have to tell them". Max said.

" Don't worry nothing s going to happen. I just needed answered if it happens that's its really Zen that I saw.I want to know where I got wrong, what really happened for her to do me like that.Anyway its already 9pm I'm going to hit to the Pinks I really need to get laid."I said.

He just ignored me and disappeared upstairs.

He came back with my biker jacket and a box of condoms.

"There you go... I know really can't stop you.My chauffeur will drop you to the club and wait for you".

I just laughed,that's typical Max he always does this.I took some condoms and wore the biker jacket then walked out.

" The perfect night" .

SNL

THIS INSERT HAS *STRONG SEXUAL* *SCENES ..READERS* *DISCRETION IS ADVISED.*

The chauffeur dropped me at Pinks and I walked in lazily. At times like this I should have been alone but then I was afraid of things that I would think of when I'm alone. The music was blazing everyone doing their own thing. As usual the strippers were there dancing and hunting for big fishes.

I really wasn't in the mood for a stripper I just wanted a woman to fuck with but not a professional stripper. I sat down as I watched people enjoying themselves. Well this time I wasn't in the VIP booth. I was at the bar with the bartender giving me shots. Well it was doing wonders.

For a moment I stopped drinking as I watched girls on the dancefloor looking for the one I could go for and then there she was.

She was swaying her hips from left to right in a lacy short off shoulder black dress with maroon heels. I couldn't see who it was I was curious because the way she was twerking, wiggling and swaying that round butt it was doing things to me. I just pushed through the crowds and reached her. I held her waist and started dancing to her rhythm and then she started grinding well I had a boner already.

The song went one and finally stopped as the DJ changed it.

The girl turned and I literally had to pick my jaws from the floor, I could see she was surprised as well but then she had a silly smirk on her face.

"Nicki!!!"

"Lewis!!!"

We exclaimed in unison.

I really wasn't expecting to see her at this place not in a million years. Yes I knew she was just crazy like me from the moment I saw her but I really didn't expect to see her here.

Anyway we tried to talk but it was noisy so we went and sat in the VIP booth. Things were really awkward for me my bner was so visible. I covered it with the cushion.

"I really didn't expect to see you here. What are you doing here." I asked.

Being jovial and jolly as she is she smiled. "I'm here to get laid bra, I haven't been getting some for some time now and it's really not a good sign, I think I have spiderwebs down there."

I laughed shaking my head she is so blunt. "Don't laugh, you're here for the same I know, seeing right now you're trying to cover your boner. I didn't really think in a million years I would turn you on. Hahaha Nicki Simmons you're doing wonders." She removed imaginary dust from her shoulders.

I laughed. "Jeez don't be too confident ok."

She rolled her eyes and that kinda made me feel some type of way and her exposed thighs weren't making things easier for me. I liked the other way trying to fight off the temptation.

She chuckled."You want some me so bad.Its written all over your face".

Well I just had to loose some morals here,since she noticed that I wanted her I wasn't going to pretend. Also she was here to get some so we were even.I made her seat in my laps and I was expecting her to be surprised but she gave me a smirk and that turns me on.

I lowered my head and kissed her with a mixture of passion and desire that left her helpless.

"Maybe we should get a room" She whispered and I secretly smirked.

I lifted her and one of the rooms.

When I closed the door just ripped the dress apart.She helped me out in removing my clothes with our mouths hungrily devouring each other.

"I want you inside of me right now and I want it hard." She demanded.

I wore my glove,well no glove no love.With full force I deeply thrust into her.And started moving pulling her hair.She was screaming in pleasure.

"Choke me,spank me". She demanded again. Ookay I didn't know she was into the Fifty Shades of grey shit but I did what she wanted.After some time we were both lying on our backs catching our breathes.

I heard some sniffs and I looked at her,she was crying.

I panicked." D-did I hurt you...Nikci..did I go in too deep....ohhh my God Nicki".

She laughed while in tears."You worry too much.I'm fine its just that I never got laid for some time and I got all emotional... trust me in easily d*ckmatised."

I chuckled in disbelief.I sat and looked at her.She was so lost that for that moment I regretted what I have just done with her.She might have been jovial and jolly but it was clear that she was going through some shit.Was she maybe like me good at putting on a poker face?

"Nicki what's wrong?Please be honest with me?"

She smiled and wiped away her tears."I want you Lewis,I want you to be buried deep inside of me but I want you to be gentle. I..I...w-want to know how it feels to have sex in a gentle and soft way".

"No Nicki ...first tell me what's wrong"

"I just never had sex with anyone who worshiped my body,who made my toes curl in pleasure,who made me moan screaming for more... It has always been hard and rough...b-but I want to experience it,I want to know how it feels.Please don't for a second think for a moment you're taking advantage of me okay...I want this too..I want this so badly..."She said bluntly.

"Are you sure?" I asked and she nodded vigorously.

Neither of us spoke for a while. There was no need. I reached out towards her, wrapping my arms around her naked body. I kissed her, her lips parted beneath the thrust of my tongue. I went on and on tormenting her so that she would be capable of experiencing the sensual desire and longing of gentle and passionate love making. Ok are we making love here? She moaned and closed her eyes as I carefully placed her on her back on the bed. I started to touch her, caress her, licking her breasts, first one giving her the most attention of my tongue, gently at first. She moaned again and it was so clear that it was too pleasurable for her to bear. Slowly I kissed my way down the length of her body, as I firmly parted her legs. I knelt between them taking my time to see her and to know her, all of her. I started stroking my fingertips gently inside of her thighs. Her body trembled eagerly. Exactly.. I got her where I wanted her to be.

I cupped her sex and slowly started to explore it while giving her countless kisses. I bent my head towards her sex and kissed it first then started doing wonders with my tongue.

She reached for my head and whispered. "Yes..oh..Lewis..now...now I ..want you now..." Right there she curled her toes and had her first orgasm.

I licked her clean and went to kiss her.

Slowly but surely I placed my shaft on her entrance then went in slowly. Her eyes were locked with mine as she gasped for air and bit her lower lip. I started moving into her slowly very slow and my eyes never left hers. It was more sensual, more erotic, more arousing and more irresistible hearing her scream my name, with her eyes locked in mine and with her nails deep in my flesh. It was like hearing my favourite music, most emotion-arousing piece of music.

After a while we were both laying breathlessly.

The whole night I made gentle love to her and it was wonderful.

Weird enough I watched her as she was asleep. She was beautiful. Very!

The next morning I woke up and she was standing on the window with a sheet around her body. I walked over to her and hugged her from behind.

"Hey morning" I said

She sighed. "Morning".

She turned and looked at me.

" You made love to me like I was a woman and not a whore.

Although you called me Zendaya at some point it kinda bruised my ego but I'm not going to allow myself to feel guilty or ashamed about what happened or about the way I felt Lewis... It was wonderful.. "She said and then freed herself from my hands.

I sighed thinking about how calling her Zendaya could have affected her. I mean even if it was no strings attached but if some girl calls me Tom while I'm fucking her my ego would be bruised

very bruised.

" I'm sorry Nicki for calling you umm"

She interrupted. "No need to apologize I don't think one night stands apologize to each other. We both got what we wanted so we are even." She was avoiding eye contact with me.

She then did a breathing exercise. "Okay Mr feisty you kinda ripped my dress apart yesterday, I don't want to walk around the streets of Georgia named please make a plan". She was her jovial self again.

I just forced myself to smile and then took my phone calling my designer.

" Let's kick some butts"

April.

"Ok April will you relax,I'm sure she is on her way back now" Jenny said.

I sighed."You can't tell me to relax Jenny she said she was going to come back late yesterday but now its already morning".

Kiara shook her head."You know how Nicki can be sometimes, she must have lots track of time while enjoying herself and drinking ".

" And what that makes me?A careless sister.I know very well that Nicki can be reckless and especially when she is drunk bit I allowed her to go out there alone.I could have gone along with

her. God knows what she was doing out there. There are a lot of dangerous people and what if ...she maybe met her step father...what will I do I...will never forgive myself."

Whilst I was still panicking the door swung open and Nicki slowly walked in. She was walking funny though, her legs slightly parted. I closely examined her and noticed red marks on her neck and exposed thighs.

I went and hugged her. "What the hell happened to you, where were you..did anyone did anything to you...and lord Jesus what are these tiny marks were you bitten by mosquitoes or something "I asked the 21 questions.

She just laughed shaking her head. There was something weird about her laugh it was empty when Nicki laughs she roars not this hahaha she just did.

Kiara laughed too." There are called love bites or hickeys miss virgin not mosquito bites."

Jenny furrowed her forehead. "I didn't know one night stands bless each other with love bites though".

Nicki had already zoned out, I snapped my fingers on her face. She did her hahaha laugh again and I frowned something was really wrong. "Guys relax ok I had gone there to get laid and I got laid the whole night, now I'm tired and I need to sleep. Please excuse me".

She did her funny snail walk and went to her room. Jenny and Kiara laughed at her but I was sick worried something was up.

"Guys I don't think is funny at all. She is not herself. The Nicki I know could have already been filling us with details about how great the sex was or the guys dick was so small that it tickles her that she ended up laughing. That's the Nicki I know...this I'm tired I have been up all night shit I don't buy it, something is up, she even came back wearing a red expensive looking dress. Anyway I will solve this later right now I have to go to work wish me luck."

They both hugged me and I went to the taxi rank. I found a taxi and I gave them the address. On the way I was so worried about Nick. I wonder what happened.

I arrived at McClain mansion and went in.

I rang the bell and well Jon opened wearing nothing but boxers with his hair messy and his eyes lazily opened.

My eyes just popped out as I swallowed a chunk of saliva.

I gathered my composure because all those packs, muscles and strong thighs were kinda making me feel some things I didn't know. Ohh my God the skin looked so soft.

"Umm hello sorry to disturb your beautiful sleep I'm here for work." I smiled.

He nodded avoiding eye contact and made way for me to enter. "I just didn't know that you were going to come this early. You sure love your job".

We went and sat in the lounge.

After long uncomfortable silence he finally spoke. "The head of the maids here will gibe you your uniform. I'm not sure about the size but I gave them the measurements I thought would do for you. They will assign you to your duties and also just because we know each other doesn't mean I will treat you differently with the others. I don't do favouritism. Am I clear?" He said firmly.

"Crystal clear". I sadly.

I just felt like he was being cold towards me very cold for my liking. Did I perhaps did something wrong that hired him. He wasn't the same guy I had enjoyed my day with the previous day. He wasn't the same guy I watched the sun set with eating candyfloss in a hotair balloon, this right here was that cold serious boss of mine. He wasn't smiling at me nor looking at me. He then stood up leaving me there with no one and with a confused look. After a while a mid forties lady

came to me. She was wearing a black and white dress with a white apron.

She smiled. " You must be April. My name is Lily I will be helping you out here. Please follow me I want you to try your uniform".

I followed her to a nice double storey cottage at the backyard. I tried my uniform well it was ok but a little bit short.

"Well it looks good on you just a little bit short just avoid bending. Anyway let me help you tie your hair. I will show you around" She said helping me with my hair.

"Thank you" I said.

She showed me around and well it was a really big place. I was assigned to clean in the lounge, dining and the kitchen. So I started with my work even though it wasn't the real reason why I was there to begin with.

I was so focused cleaning the kitchen utensils and all when I heard giggles. The person giggling came to the kitchen I tensed.

"Ohhh hey dear can you please go clean the master bedroom" I knew this irritating voice. What's her name again. Yea Ruth.

I turned and looked at her she clenched her jaws and faked a smile.

"Ohh its you I'm sorry about last time dead Please go clean our master bedroom". I looked at her then at Jon who gladly looked away.

" Umm babe I think I will just ask someone to do it. I mean she his to get used to this pace first." Jon said.

"Exactly babe that's what I'm trying to do if she get to know the rooms by cleaning them" She said.

"Where is the bedroom?" I asked.

"On the second floor the first room" She said and I walked over leaving the two lovebirds exchanging spit.

I found the room and opened it.

It smelled sex,I almost threw up.I went and opened the door of the balcony,the started cleaning.

Clothes were all over the place,panties and condoms.Ahh it was beyond disgusting for me.

I removed the sheets and put then in the washing machine.I found some silky white sheets in the walk in closet then I made the bed.After I was all done I sprayed some lavender air freshener.It smelled fresh.The room was so big and manly.Only white,black and grey dominated the room.

Ruth suddenly walked in and held my arm tightly ookay she was testing me now.

"I won't let you take him away from me,I won't let you take him you hear me.He is mine only mine and you're not going to separate us never". She continued to tighten her grip while sniffing.

" Let go of me before I do something that I will regret."I said firmly.

She let me and started pacing up and down while crying.

"Please I'm begging you stay faraway from him.He is mine please...don't destroy what we have I can't handle another heartbreak. I can't be abandoned again.I love Jon so much".

She sat down rubbing her head,crying.

I just shook my head and walked out.This really was weird,she was being weird,one minute she is ready to pounce on me and another minute she is crying and vulnerable. If this is what love makes people do then please spare me.I went back downstairs and continued doing my job.I could feel eyes piercing through my skin and I knew it was Jon sitting on the couch pretending like he was doing something on his laptop.

I walked out without saying a word.If he was acting cold towards me then I was going to act like ice.I'm sure he will not be able to handle my freezing attitude.Well there was nothing much to do anyway around pm I was about to knock off around 2.So I went to the lounge to inform Jon after changing my uniform.He was so lost in his thoughts that I had to call him twice.

" Yes short stuff what did you say".I kinda felt happy hearing him calling me short stuff.. weird I

know.

"I said I'm going now". I said.

" Ohhh umn sure."He walked me to the door.He opened for me and I was about to walk out when I accidentally bumped into his rockhard chest.

Suddenly the room felt so small,so hot, so I don't know...

We locked eyes and within a moment he was breathing on my face.

I breathed heavily and then looked the other way.

"I. I..think you should go" He stammered.

"S-sure". I opened the door and banged it while walking away.

I can't believe that nigger.

Anyway the taxi took me to Italia. I changed into a skin jean and red gold T-shirt then started helping Kiara out since I wasn't delivering for the mean time.She also noticed Nicki's odd behavior and informed me that she was awfully quite,clumsy all of a sudden and was zoning out repeatedly.

I was super worried. After a while they walked in two early fifties man,the other one looked so familiar.

"Are they my eyes or that one man look so familiar" Kiara said.

"I think so too. Like its someone .Let me go over."

I walked to them and they gave me disgusting looks. I felt my insides turning. Like what the fuck.

"Gentleman how can I help you". I said with a fake smile.

" We are looking for Nicki Simmons but for now a pan piazza will do". the familiar one said. At that moment Nicki walked in and when she saw the oldies. I saw tears forming in her eyes. I took one and one and got two.

This was Nicki's disgusting, filthy, rapist step father.

I clenched my jaws as they stood up making their way to Nicki who was already walking out.

I followed them Kiara and Jenny were already on my tail too, I wonder who called Jenny though.

"You think we were not going to find you,whore!!" The familiar one held her arm tightly causing her to flinch.

"What is this ...love bites..you have already started whoring around" The other one said.

I was doing my breathing exercise trying to be calm but it didn't work."Let go of her!!!"I screamed.

The familiar one laughed."or what girly are you going to kick my balls...ohhh I'm so scared"

He had already added petrol to the burning fire.I don't know how I managed to reach him with my painful leg.Within a moment he was groaning nursing his balls.I punched him repeatedly on that stupid face.Whilst Jenny and Kiara were dealing with the other one.I knew we were making

a scene already.

They both finally managed to escape well after they had received some punches.

I hugged Nicki who was crying.

"Im whore ,he is right I'm a whore". She cried.

" You're not a whore sweety don't take his words to heart."I said.

She was agitated. "I had sex with Lewis last night.What does that make me?" She screamed.

"Holy Mary mother of God,blessed are you among woman...you did I what Nicki!!!"Jenny exclaimed.

End of chapter1 9

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 0

April.

"You won't be able to *handle the chills".*

"Nicki what did you just say to me?" I asked with a serious tone.

"I didn't say I saw Jesus,you heard that right I fucked Lewis and won the award of the number one whore of Georgia". She said sarcastically.

" Ohhh my America.Nicki how did you even do that...I mean how did you two pull that off.You know what girls let's go sit down,Nicki you got a lot of explaining to do".Kiara said dragging Nicki,while Jenny and me followed.

Thank God it was now lunch time or else Mr Cedric was going to fire us.Jenny went and took two boxes of piazza while we wait for Nicki to spill the beans.We finally settled and looked at her.

She sighed and looked at us. "If looks could kill I was you could have been doing my memorial service by now. The way you're throwing daggers at me yoooh".

Jenny rolled her eyes. "Just tell us already".

I could see that this was hard for her, so hard. I wonder what Lewis really did. Did he maybe forced himself on her?

"I was dancing, minding my own business. I wasn't even drunk, I was just tipsy. I felt hands around my waist and someone dancing behind me. You know I love being naughty so I started grinding on him and he had a boner.

When I turned to see who it was boom it was Lewis in flesh.

Imma be honest he is sexy we all know that and well I had some hots for him but well he was way out of my low league even though we kinda clicked. We talked and I was horny and he had a boner he was horny too. It was a two dogs on heat situation here. He kissed me and we went to one of the beautiful rooms there. Remember I told you I was my stepfathers sex toy, he was always rough with me hairpulling, spankings, whips, choking that's the shit he did to me... so all this shit that was sex according to me. So Lewis fucked the way I'm used to and he was doing everything to my command. It all reminded me about that stepfather of mine, all the times he breathed on my back, his disgusting sweat dripping on me. I couldn't take it anymore so I started to cry. Lewis was nervous he thought maybe he had hurt me. Then I was honest with him i told him point blank that I wanted to have gentle love making with him. I honestly told him that I never had gentle sex before which is true, to me sex was always a duty. Truth be told back at the asylum I slept with that nurse so that he doesn't electrocute me, so you know I never had sex at my own will expect with Lewis.

Anyway he asked me if I wanted it and I was damn sure I wanted. When he touched me I felt this heat burning me up, I couldn't deny myself the sexual fulfilment. All I can say is I experienced the gentle, soft and tender warmth of his possession. He was so so good, it was magical. The way

our eyes locked the way he breathed on my neck, I swear I cried tears of joy. We made love almost all night, he treated me like a woman not a whore. However in his mind I guess it wasn't me he was making love to but a girl named Zendaya". She said sadly as tears formed in her eyes.

We kept quiet waiting for her to finish her story.

She sniffed countless times.

"For a moment I thought he knew that he was worshipping my body...for a moment I thought he knew he was making magical love to Nicki Simmons. However that wasn't the case to him I was his precious Zendaya.

At first I thought it was in my head but when he called me for the third time, I knew I wasn't wrong. He had his eyes closed and whispered Zendaya right into my ear, then he came and passed out.

I was hurt, my ego was bruised, I felt used. It might have been a one nightstand but to me it was like the first time I was having sex, then he just had to ruin the moment for me just like that. Anyway what is done is done I have to accept the fact that I will never have anyone who will value me for me. I mean who would want damaged goods like me, who would want love someone who was made a sex slave by their step father, someone who people love to take advantage of."

I have seen Nicki break several times but at this point, she was beyond broken. I didn't even know how to comfort. I was angry, how could Lewis do this to her, I don't care about the one nightstand shit, how could he.

"I'm sorry Nicki but trust me you will find someone who will love you and treat you like a queen that you're. Someone who will worship the ground that you walk on. Don't ever feel unloved because there is a guy out there for you." I shushed her as she broke down in my arms.

Kiara and Jenny were looking at her with pity in their eyes. You know when Nicki is like this it will be like the lights are off, it's only darkness around. Even the atmosphere will change. It's like she is our source of happiness, if she is not happy then it affects the four of us together.

"Those rich snobs are going to be the death of me I swear". I said in anger.

"The last time I checked you and Jon are fine. I mean you even went to Brussels together" Jenny said looking confused.

"How was your first day at work by the way." Nicki who was done crying asked.

"Don't even ask, I don't know what that son of a biscuit thinks of himself. We were doing just fine the previous day but today he was so cold, so moody, he wasn't even looking at me, it's like my presence was disgusting him. Then on the other side there was his girlfriend, can you believe it she asked me to clean their bedroom just after they had their morning sex I'm sure. I had to

change the bedding, pick up used condoms can you believe it. It was beyond disgusting. Then she later came to me all ready to play Rambo on me but then minutes later she was crying begging me to stay away from her relationship. She is just crazy of you ask me. That Jon I don't even have words for him, he acts like I'm a stranger to him when his girl is around." I sighed angrily.

"Lewis and Jon needs the father, the son and the holy spirit. They need Jesus, his saints and warrior angels. Jon is so indecisive, what really does he want." Jenny said with a frown.

Kiara frowned too. "Just give him double what he is giving you, if he is giving cold shoulder give him an ice shoulder.. Freeze that son of a bitch with your attitude."

"Yes baby that's more like it". Jenny said snapping her fingers.

I just laughed shaking my head. Nicki smiled too, though she wasn't herself but I was there for her, all of us were.

Anyway we worked a little before finally knocking off.

At least Nicki was now joking around here and there but I could see the emptiness in her eyes,its like a part of her was left with Lewis.

Anyway I cooked because these girls were too lazy to.We ate while chatting here and there.

I slept with Nicki in my room because I couldn't just let her out of my sight,God knows what was going on in her brain.We stayer in bebed for a long time without saying a thing but I knew she was wide awake,with the way she constantly cleared her throat.

"Did you use protection?" I asked out of the blue.

She quickly sat on the bed."Well...y-yes I..remember when...we fucked...he ... had a glove on...b-but.. Ohhh God ..when....we made love...I...ummm..I didn't see him..putting ...anything on....Shit.. I was so..caught up in the moment t-that.....ohhh God".

I quickly got off the bed and held my waist with both hands."Are you kidding me Nicki Simmons.... Are you crazy,What am I even asking? How can you be so careless, you fucked without protection, how reckless can you be..what if he is sick... What if ...You know what let's go to the pharmacy right now!!!"I shouted.

"Relax I'm hundred percent sure he is clean okay". She said softly.

"Ohhh really,let's say he is.Do you want to be a mother" I shouted.

"Why should I be a mother..?" She asked looking confused. I felt like smacking her.

"You're a result of unprotected sex. Now do you get it,do you want to be pregnant well unless Lewis has a good pullout game or unless he shoots blanks" I said.

She got off the bed."Ohhh why didn't you tell me earlier...Jeez I can't fall pregnant,..I can't be fat and have a big nose."

"I was trying to tell you...and I can't believe you're worried about being fat.Let's hurry to the pharmacy before they close.We will have to buy those birth controls...those 72hours after....I can't believe you're this reckless Nicki." I said taking my nightgown and wearing slippers.

We met Jenny and Kiara halfway.

"What's happening.?" Kiara asked.

"She had unprotected sex with Lewis.. Can you believe her..the whole night fucking without a condom with someone you barely know". I said walking out with the girls on my tail.

" I don't think morning afters will work here".Kiara said.

"For people who knows dicks so much you're kinda stupid...there are those which work after 72hours.We are going to buy them now because we might forget".

They didn't say anything but followed me like lost puppies.Luckily the pharmacy wasn't closed so I bought the pills and a box of condoms. The shopkeeper just looked at us in a questioning manner.I rolled my eyes because I knew what she was thinking already.

We walked out with them following me in silence.

" Nicki you will take these the day after tomorrow. Girls if you feel like getting laid please take these condoms with you.On weekend Nicki we are going for testing, I can't believe you would put your healthy at risk like that."

They just nodded in silence.

We went back home.

"Can you please sing a lullaby for me". Nicki said with a cute pout on her face.She normally dies this when I'm mad at her.Well in as much as I felt bad for her because if what Lewis had done,I was angry at her for putting her healthy at risk like that.

I furrowed my forehead." I will sing a lullaby for you...

Twinkle twinkle little whore...

Close your legs they are not a door".

I covered my head with a sheet.She started laughing hitting me with her pillow.

"I'm a little whore now". She said laughing.

" You awarded yourself the whore of Georgia so yea you're...my little sister whore".I said hitting her back.

We had a pillow fight. At least she was happy. We finally drifted off to sleep. When I woke up the following morning my whole body ached.

Nicki's right leg was on my chest, the other one had pushed my lower body from the bed, her head was almost hanging down, her hands were flying all over the place.

I finally escaped from the bed. "Remind me not to share the same bed with Nicki again. I wonder how Lewis dealt with this".

I said stretching myself, going to the bathroom.

I took a quick bath, lotioned and wore a black skinny jean with a white vest.

I tied my hair into a messy bun.

I went to the kitchen and found Kiara making her cereal.

I made myself some and another for Nicki.

I looked at Kiara. "We all know Nicki is the most fragile and vulnerable among the four of us. I know that seeing her stepfather yesterday she was affected. Don't key her out of your sight not even for a moment. You never know that old man might come back again. We also what's going on in her head, the little pride she was holding on to was bruised by Lewis, so right now she is so vulnerable take care of her. If anything happens call me put my number on the speed dial." I said firmly.

"Ok April.I will do so.In fact I will ask Jenny to run errands for Mr Cedric Nicki will do the cleaning, that way I will be able to keep an eye on her". She said.

I gave her Nicki's cereal." Yes sounds like a plan.Make sure she eats and takes her anti-depressants.Take care yourselves ok.I will leave now".

"Don't forget to give that nigger an ice shoulder". She said.

I chuckled." Consider it done"

I walked out and went to the taxi rank.

As usual I was dropped off and rang the bell.

This time Lily opened for me.

"Hello Lily". I said walking in.

She greeted me back.

"Is Mr McClain around?" I asked.

"We left for work early in the morning." She said.

I sighed in relief because I seriously wasn't ready for that niggers mood swings. One minute he acts like I'm important and the next moment I'm gabbage.

I started doing my work but my aim was to know every corner that had CCTV.

I cleaned my assigned rooms and started to give myself a tour around the house. Almost at every corner of every passageway there was a camera, I don't know how I was going to pull this off. I don't know how I was going to go into his study without having to look suspicious. Anyway I went into one of the rooms which was dark. Creepy if you ask me. They were picture frames or paintings covered with white sheets. Curiosity got the best of me and I uncovered one of them. I'm really not an artist but I can analyse something and especially a picture. It portrayed

darkness, misery and sorrow. It was a painting of a kid sitting down hugging their knees everything else around was painted in black and there shadows of scary people around.

"This is really weird why does Jon keep such paintings." I asked myself.

For some reason. I felt like there was more to it than what meets the eye. I quickly covered the painting and walked out.

"Who are you Jon McClain" I whispered. I just had this unsettling feeling.

Anyway I went to the cottage and had my breakfast with the other maids. They were so friendly and none of them were of my age. Lily used to be Jon's nanny for a very long time and they were pretty close.

"So is Jon a really good artist, I mean in drawing, paintings and stuff like that" I asked.

Lily laughed. "Ohh hell no, he knows nothing about that. He is just good at business and making money. Growing up he wasn't like any other kids he was a typical nerd, solving maths and doing accounts at very young age. I knew he would make a good businessman one day."

I looked at her curiously. "Wasn't he supposed to be like playing with other kids and stuff"

She shook her head. "No not really he was more of a loner, he hated the crowds. He always locked himself in his room, he enjoyed his own presence and it was really very hard to break through him, that's just who he was. But years passed and he has changed though, he is mingling and all. He surprised me there but then I guess his three influenced it."

I didn't ask more questions because I would look like some undercover paparazzi. I just had this unsettling feeling though, his childhood was pretty weird and the paintings who keeps such scary, dark paintings like that. I couldn't help but think that there was a mystery surrounding Jon McClain.

I shook my head to dispel my crazy thoughts."Okay that's none of my business. "I whispered to myself.

I went to the kitchen and started cleaning since the chefs were done cooking lunch for the boss.I was so busy cleaning,singing and minding my own business when I felt that someone was looking at me.I turned and it was Jon leaning on the wall.

" Umm afternoon Mr McClain".i said with a serious tone.

He was still avoiding eye contact. Unbelievable!

"Hey wassup short stuff".

" Its April for you Mr McClain" I said coldly.

He sighed. "Okaaay April can you please bring one beer and two cups of black coffee with no sugar please".

"Sure thing". I didn't look at him, there was no point but I could feel that he was still in the room and was staring at me. I took some coffee from the coffee machine.

" Is there anything else that you want Mr McClain". I asked without looking at him.

He cleared his throat. "Umm no".

I turned and looked at him.

"Just so you know staring is rude. Stop gawking at me, I can feel it, it makes my skin cringe."

He didn't say anything but just opened his mouth in shock.

I paced the two cups of coffee and a can of cold beer in a tray.

"Close your mouth flies will enter".

I walked out. I was done playing Miss Nice. Now he was going to deal with the chills. He started with the coldness but now he is the one freezing.

I found Max and Lewis in a deep conversation. I felt like smacking Lewis with the back of my hand, how could he be so insensitive.

I placed the tray down in full force that the coffee almost spilt.

They both looked at me.

I narrowed my eyes towards Lewis and he quickly looked down.

"Afternoon Mr Jackson Jackson." I said coldly.

They both replied.

I turned and dragged my feet away. I bumped into Jon in process who held both my arms and looked at me.

"Let go of me". I said softly but he wasn't even budging.

I snapped my fingers at him." Earth to you Mr McClain, I know I'm good looking but let go of me".

Yea right I used the same line he used on me back when I met him for the second time at the asylum.

Max started laughing.

"She got you there bro,let go of her". Max said laughing.

He slowly let go with his eyes locked in mine. I just sighed and walked away leaving them laughing at him.

Around 2, I went and changed my uniform then wore my clothes.

I walked to the lounge and the guys were talking about business seriously that they didn't even hear me coming in.

" Mom said I should give Julian June the deal, I don't get it though why should she be the only one benefitting from this." Jon said.

I felt my whole world crumbling. So I was right Jon was doing deals with that wicked woman. How could he? That woman is wicked even Satan is afraid of her.

Max saw me. "Are you ok April, you are looking like you just seen a ghost"

"Short stuff is-"

I interrupted. "I said its April for you". I said coldly.

He closed his eyes clenching his jaws." April are you ok?"

"I'm ok.I'm about to knock off but before I leave I want to say something to you Lewis right here right now."

Lewis shifted uncomfortably.

"I'm confronting you not as Jon's helper but as Nicki's sister.If you badly want to vent out your emotions please don't use my sister,already sh has a lot in her plate don't add to that.I understand that it was a mutual agreement between the both of you to have sex together but you knew that you were doing this because you wanted to vent out your frustrations.What you did hurt the little pride that Nicki was holding on to.She--"

Before I could finish my phone rang.It was Kiara.

I quickly answered.

"What's going on, is Nicki Ok?" I asked. Lewis quickly stood up and within a blink he was standing in front of me.

"I-is N-Nicki okay...what happened?" He stammered.

I gave him the "just shut up" look.

"Nicki's stepfather is here again...I hid Nicki but he is causing a scene. He came with two teenage boys. Please come soon".

"Ohhh I'm gonna kill that son of a bitch. Make sure Nicki is ok I'm on way right now. Make sure he doesn't touch Nicki".

I said and hung up. Now this has got the attention of everyone in the room.

I started walking out and they were following me like lost puppies.

Lewis.

" Lewis's tender love".

"Where do you think you're going". April asked giving us the look that can make anyone shit in their pants.

" We want to make sure Nicki is ok we are going with you".I said.

She rolled her eyes."Like you care.Shouldn't you be like with your precious Zendaya right now".

"Why don't you call the police ?" Max said

"They take time and time is not on my side." She said.

She had all the right to shout at me I wasn't going to take it to heart.After all what I did was wrong.I had hurt Nicki.It was clear that Nicki was going through a lot and I acted so insensitive. How could I picture Zendaya in my head while making love to Nicki.I know she acted like it was just no strings attached but I know for a certain she felt used.Max was throwing daggers at me,I knew he needed an explanation. I hadn't disclosed this to anyone and I know I was going to be in hot soup.Myaybe if Gareth was here he was going to save me.

Anyway Jon drove like a maniac to downtown within minutes we had arrived at Italia.A few people were outside watching.

Nicki didn't even wait for the car t be parked she walked out while the car was still moving.

We followed her and I felt my anger rising in full force when I see some old man dragging Nicki by her hair. Kiara and Jenny were busy willing some two boys with belts.

Before we could even do anything April was already on the old man's face. Never in my life have I seen a girl throw mean punches like that. The man was given two mean knockout punches and he was on the ground. She sat on his chest and started blessing him with punches.

I ran to Nicki who was crying hugging her knees.

I hugged her "I'm here..I'm here okay nothing will happen to you"

She was shaking like nobody's business.

"P-please..d-don't let him take me away....p-please d-dont l-let him..." She cried.

I cupped her face. "I'm here..I'm here...I won't let that happen ..I will be damned to let that happen. You hear me".

She nodded her head. I baby kissed her. "Dont worry everything is fine now".

I hugged her tightly and she clung on me.

On the other side Jon was trying to stop April from punching that man but he was pushed and punched on the face.

"Don't fucken interfere you hear me".

I always thought she was the sweetest among the four of them but now it was like a lion was unleashed.

The man managed to escape as she was shouting at Jon who was now holding his bleeding nose.

The two teenage boys who Kiara and Jenny was dealing with also ran for their lives These girls were really maniacs.

" I fucken told you to fucken stay away and now he has escaped again thanks to you mighty Jon McClain."

The vicious April was about to lash out at Jon but thanks to Max he held both her arms.

I took Nicki to the car who was still sniffing. She sat on my laps in a foetus position.

"T-tell...M-max and..Jon to leave her alone...she is..still very angry...they won't be able to ...handle her".She said with hiccups.

I called Max because there was no way I was going to Nicki alone.I informed them and they left April who just walked off in anger.

They came to the car with Jon covering his nose with a handkerchief, I wanted to laugh but this wasn't the moment. They came into the car and both gave me the looks when they saw Nicki curled on my laps.

" Drive to my house please." I said to Max and he just obliged.

We arrived and I carried Nicki upstairs.

"Did you eat?" I asked carefully laying her on the bed.

"Y-yes". I could tell she was lying.

" Don't move I'm coming back? "I went to the kitchen and took the food that I laid my eyes on.

I passed by the lounge and Max was nursing Jon' nose. I laughed and went to the bedroom.

" All this food...ohh no I'm not hungry Lewis."She said.

"I didn't ask you.Now you're going to open your mouthabd sat the food or we will have problems".
I said firmly and started feeding her.

She ate half of the food.

Women sometimes.

I mad a bath for her and added a lot of bath foam and salts in the water.

I carried her again." Come on,I'm going to bath you".

"No I will do it myself." She said shyly.

I rolled my eyes."I ate your sweet cookie girl there is no need to be shy."

I removed her clothes and placed her in the tub.

It wasn't easy though she was really tempting but this wasn't the time not when she is broken like this and not when I messed up.

I finished bathing her and dried her hair.

Naked like that I placed her under the sheets.

"Here drink these painkillers and sleeping pills.You really need to rest.I hope you're not allergic to any of the pills." I said giving her the pills.

"No I'm not allergic". She took the pills and drank them.

I got under the covers with her,hugged her,brushing her hair,giving her wet kisses all over the face within some minutes she was fast asleep.

I made sure she was nicely covered and went downstairs.

Max was ready to murder me." How can you use her like that?"

That was his first question.

"I didn't mean to ok.I really didn't mean to" I said honestly.

"You have to make things right.You could clearly see that she is going through a lot.How is she by the way?" Jon asked.

"She is asleep now.I will talk to her once she is awake.How is your nose by the way?"I asked.

He shook his head. "That was one hell of a mean punch. Remind me again to leave short stuff alone especially when she is angry".

We all laughed at him. "I have never seen a girl throwing punches like that. She was someone I couldn't recognize." Max said.

"Do you think maybe she has multiple personalities too?" I asked.

"No I doubt that. Jenny once told me that she used to do boxing and martial arts back at the asylum. She is everything that one if you want a sweet girl you will get her, if you want a soft one you will get her and if you want a fierce one you will get her, all from one person. She is unpredictable and mysterious if you ask me". Max said.

Jon shakes his head. "She has been giving me a cold shoulder lately, I can't handle it anymore. All I was trying to do was to just stay away from her after Max planted ideas into my head. You know what I'm going to see her now. I don't care if she is going to punch me." He stood up.

"You're falling in too deep and its not even funny" I mocked.

"Fuck you." He said walking out.

Max gave me a stern look. "I'm so disappointed in you. Make sure the girl is fine. I'm going to take Jenny to town we have to buy something for the twins." He stood up and gave me a pat on the shoulder before walking out.

I went upstairs and joined Nicki in bed. I cuddled her and drifted off to sleep.

I was later awakened by a soft voice. "Let go Lewis I want to pee".

I loosened my grip,she ran to the toilet and did her business.

She came back later and I stared at her naked body while she made her way to the bed.It was complete perfection. Perfecto!

"Stop starring its rude" She said while getting under the covers.

I gave her a smooch."You're beautiful, very beautiful ".

She looked down sadly." I don't feel beautiful".

"Why?? Tell me your story Nicki. I want to know you all of you." I said.

She sighed. "You will look at me differently you will be disgusted by me".

"Never, tell me your story" I insisted.

She breathed heavily. " My mother is mentally unstable so my steldad that man you saw earlier dragging me. Made me his sex slave since mom couldn't fulfill her duties. He started rapping me since I was 15, I couldn't report because he was the one taking care of me and my mother's medical expenses. It was so hard for me acting like I was alright while I was molested like that, I was engaged in domestic violence and then I was diagnosed with bipolar. In the asylum that's when I met the girls we were there for each other but during the time for electrocution it was man for himself. There are two nurses there who used to fuck me so that I won't be electrocuted. Yes they all might have used protection and spared me from contracting diseases but they destroyed me Lewis. When we had sex and when I heard you calling me Zendaya, I felt used, I felt not worth of anyone worshipping my damaged body."

I couldn't contain the anger I was feeling I just got off the bed and went to stand on the balcony. How can human do that to another human. They were going to pay dearly for messing with her like that.

At the same time my conscience reprimanded me for my behavior how could I have not seen it that she was going through a lot especially when she told me that she never had gentle sex before.

I cooled down and went back to her she was crying.

"I know you're disgusted by me...I know...I will just go".

She said.

I just smashed my lips on her and gave her one hell of a kiss.

" I will never be disgusted by you ok.Never.You're strong and beautiful.Now stop crying it ain't cute at all.Truth me they are going to pay heavily for what they did to you ".I said.

She smiled in tears." I'm kinda hungry".

"Let me go warm some food for you ok". I baby kissed her and went downstairs.

I went to the kitchen and started warming some food which my chef had cooked.

I was humming a song minding my own business when someone rang the bell.

Gareth is the only one who has the system of doing that otherwise Jon and Max just kick their way in they really don't have manners.

I went and opened the door. My jaws dropped.

"ZENDAYA!!!"

End of chapter2 0

Let's comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 1

Lewis.

"I want you to stay".

I thought I was dreaming or hallucinating but no she was standing right there in front of me in flesh.

"Z-zendaya"... I stammered.

She gave me a bone crushing hug.

" Lewis...my love ".

I didn't have the power to even hug her back.I had waited for this moment for a very long time and now that it was here,I felt powerless.

I managed to walk inside with her clung on me.

I sat on the couch and she sat besides me.

After long silence I stood up.

" Why Zendaya...why?"That's what I could manage ask her.

She started crying.

"No don't cry,I want answers.Why would you do me like that huh,why would you ghost me like that.A fucken 13 years relationship was down the drain just like that".

" I had no other choice Lewis. I couldn't marry you.My father wanted to use my marriage with you to gain more wealth.He wanted me to be married to you then divorce you.Through the divorce I would claim some of your property. I couldn't do it because I saw how hard you worked for everything that you have now.He gave me an ultimatum Lewis either to marry you and do what he wanted or to leave you.I had to leave Lewis because I couldn't do it, I couldn't betray you like that.I didn't want us to have a marriage based on lies.I had to sacrifice my love too for your sake..for us.You know me Lewis, you know me very well Lewis.We were doing just fine why would I be selfish huh."

"So why are you back now?" I asked wiping off my tears.

"Why are you back?"

"I can finally stand my ground. I can voice against my father,he no longer has control over me because I'm my own person.I'm back for you,I'm back for us." She said crying.

I sighed shaking my head."For fucken 3 years Zen.3 years I ruined my life because of you because you left me.Couldn't you at least gave me a heads up of what was happening. Money is not important Zen and you know I could have preferred to give your father all the money that he wanted just to be with you.Not everything is about money.My love for you was stronger than my love for money.We could have fought this together but you chose to give up without even trying.I read somewhere that If a person loves someone they can move mountains for them,they can walk on water for them,I could have gave up everything just to be with you.You left me with my money but did it give me happiness, did it warm my bed at night?Hell no it didn't. I became a miserable man without Zendaya.You knew how much I love you but you ju---"Before I finished I saw Nicki standing on the stairs with a sheet wrapped around her body.She looked at Zendaya then back at me,then at Zendaya again.

"Umm..ahh...I thought..s-something..h-had...happened...I. was...I will.. J-just....leave you ..two"

She ran upstairs.

Zendaya looked at me. "Is she the rebound?" She asked with tears falling down.

I kept quiet. I knew I had to make a decision, a hard decision. I had yearned to see Zendaya for years and now she was here. I completely understood that she was forced to do this and she did what she thought was the best. She did what she thought was right at the moment.

"Zendaya please leave". I said softly. I had made up my mind.

"W-whaat Lewis are you going to give up on us just like this". She sobbed.

" I hate seeing you crying like this.I don't want you to cry.Three years back you made your decision,you gave up on us so easily without thinking twice. You had a choice Zendaya,you could have chosen to stay and tell me the truth and we could have been together even in poverty but you chose the easiest way out.You know I just learnt something about you today that I didn't know for 13 years.Zendaya when the going gets tough,you runaway, you choose to leave.You do not have the will to fight for what you love.But I want a strong woman who will fight for and with me through it all,not a women who chooses to runaway from their problems instead of looking for solutions.Today I also make my choice.It's so hard for me but I have to let you go because one day you may just pack your things and leave when the going gets tough. Just go,we had our time,we had our moments but it's over now.You insulted the love I had for you,you took it for granted".I said emotionally.

She stood up." And you think I'm going to give up to that one man I loved for 13 years Lewis.Think again.I know you're not in your right state of mind and its understandable, I will give you time but I'm not about to give up on us.I lost you once,I'm not about to loose you again.You have loved me for 13 years Lewis,you're not about to give up on us over someone you saw recently. I won't let that happen my love."

I sighed."Just like how you managed to leave three years back,just do it again Zen.I might have been with you for 13 years but the you never know God's plans,the one that is meant for me maybe someone I just met yesterday but it feels like I have known them forever."

I walked and opened the door for her. She baby kissed me.

"I love you and I will never stop. I'm giving you time to cool off". She said and walked out.

This wasn't the easiest choice ever because she was the only woman I have ever loved like that but I had to make the decision to let her go. It wasn't going to be easy but I will survive.

Anyway I walked upstairs and met Nicki fully dressed.

I folded my arms. "And where do you think you're going?"

She sighed. "I just ...want to give the two of you space and. ...I'm ...sure ..the girls are worried about me".

I held her hand and led her to the bedroom.

"B-but Lewis...you and Zendaya..." She said.

I interrupted. "Me and Zendaya are over... We were long over anyway.She is my ex fiancé.I don't wanna talk about her.Lets go and shower,then I will inform April that you're sleeping here today".

She didn't protest.I removed our clothes and then carried her to the shower.We had an innocent shower.I was not going to do anything sexual with her not when both of us were emotionally disturbed like this,on top of that I never wanted her to feel like I was using her to vent out my emotions. She deserves better.

I lotioned both of us and carefully laid her in bed.

" I will go warm our food ok".She nodded I baby kissed her and went downstairs. I warmed our food and went back to the room.

"Come let's feed you first".

I started feeding her and she ate half the food.I ate the other half.

I cuddled besides her and we stay like that for a long time in silence.

" She is very beautiful".She said.

I chuckled. "Have you seen yourself?You're more than the word beautiful.I know you still feel like I'm using you or something but that's not the case.I truly apologize for calling out her name while making love to you,it was just my weak moment and emotions were running all over my head.I will make it up to you.I promise. You're very beautiful Nicki,don't ever feel like you're not worthy if anything you deserve only the best that God can offer.Only the best". I baby kissed her.

" Don't think too much go to sleep ok.You need the rest,you have been stressing yourself so much".

"Before I sleep I want to call April.I'm sure she is worried."

I took my phone and gave her.She dialled her number and the phone was answered on the third ring.

"Hello,who is this?" April asked with a stern voice.

"Girl its me Nicki,I'm using Lewis' phone. I'm sleeping over to his place today". She said.

" Ohh my God I was so damn worried about you...are you ok?...did you eat?...did that son of a biscuit give you problems?... If you're not feeling uncomfortable just ask him to drive you over...where is he anyway?.. Are you alone?"

April bombed her with questions.

Nicki laughed."Relax sis he is here with me ok.I'm not feeling uncomfortable and I ate ok.I'm fine".

April sighed. "Fine but don't open legs for that nigger he doesn't deserve your precious cookie ok. Am I clear".

I laughed." Are you serious right now April. She is in my bed naked right now".

Nicki pinched me and I started laughing. April started shouting. "Hey you Nicki I will give you a hiding when you get back.No you will be grounded no cellphone, no TV you hear me".

Nicki laughed." Stop mommy we are not doing anything, you worry too much.You will get old very quickly."

April chuckled."I can tell you're happy,I'm relieved but if you think of doing please don't forget to use protection.... Bye I have to go someone is on the door".

She hung up and Nicki smiled.

"April is really strange one minute she is a lioness and another minute she is a sheep" I said shaking my head.

"That's who she is. All soft but if you press her wrong buttons, you will wish you have never met her". Nicki said yawning.

" You're feeling sleepy?" I asked.

She nodded while yawning. I baby kissed all over the face and after some minutes she was fast asleep.

I couldn't sleep a wink though. I just couldn't.

After hours I got off the bed and went to the balcony.

Yes its said man do not cry but I just couldn't contain it anymore.It was too much for me now.I waited for three years to get the answers from Zen now that she told me everything I just wished she never came back.I couldn't believe that all the moments we had,all the trials and tribulations we passed were just down the drain.We have been through so much together when she miscarried I was there for her,when she had a stillborn I was still there for her,when my grandma died she was there for me,so how could she gave up so easily that too at the crucial moment.

I felt soft and warmth hands hugging me from behind.

I quickly wiped off my tears and turned.

"Hey why did you wake up". I asked.

" You didn't or you couldn't sleep right?"Nicki said.

I smiled lazily. "Yea,things have been running through my head so I couldn't sleep"

She looked into my eyes."Its good to cry it out,you know.You really don't have to pretend like everything is ok".

She hugged me standing on her toes.That's short she is.I cried it out just like she said.After a while I was feeling like a burden have been removed from my shoulders.

"I dated her for 13years.We have been through so much together. I proposed she accepted, I was ready to wife her.Then three years back she just ghosted me,she just left a not and the ring saying that I wasn't ready for such a big commitment. Then today she came back saying she has an explanation for her behavior. She told me that her father wanted us to get married and then divorce. Through she would claim my property. So he gave her an ultimatum and she chose the latter.She chose to leave because she couldn't lie to me,she couldn't do it,she couldn't marry me for my wealth".

She sighed." So why did you let her go.You're really ...m-miserable..w-without her".

I breathed heavily. "I had to let her go.The moment she started explaining to me the reason why she left,I realized she was never meant to be mine.I realized at any given time she might leave,when things gets difficult for her.I want a woman who I will be sure that she got my back no matter what.When I go out there I'm ready to battle just for the woman I love,I want to let my guard down knowing that my woman is ready to battle for me as well.For someone like Zendaya she can leave at any given time and I don't want that,I want someone who stays.Who will be with me through it all.She was a victim in this too right, she could have told me the truth we could have fought that last trial together but she backed out.

And do you know why I'm miserable?I'm thinking about all those years I wasted loving someone who was going to give up on is on the last minute,loving someone who was never meant to be mine to begin with.But its over now there is really no need to cry over spilt milk,what is done its done. I found the closure I wanted,in as much as it is hard, for me the Zendaya Cornell Chapter is closed".

"When you need someone to talk to.I will be here ok". She said.

" Thank you and just remember I'm there for you too ok.We are there for each other.Now lets go get our beauty sleep".

I scooped her up,she giggled while I went to the bed.

Jon

"Seal it with a kiss".

I breathed in and out again,I have been doing this breathing exercise for as long as I remember.Since I'm not April's favourite person right now,it was really going to be hard to talk to her maybe without receiving punches.I finally gathered enough courage and rang the bell.I had my fingers crossed when the door opened.It was Kiara she raised her eyebrows and folded her arms.Well I guess I'm no one's favourite person right now.

"Look what the punch dragged in.How can I help you Mr McClain" She said sarcastically.

I bet April told them about my cold attitude towards her.

"Ummm can I see April please" I said.

"You couldn't handle the chills anymore,now you're back again. Come on in" She laughed shaking her head and paving way for me.

"She is in her room?" I asked.

"Yes of course and by the way good luck you really need it.If I was you I would go there wearing a helmet, you never know things that might be thrown your way". She chuckled going to her room.Now I was even more nervous.

Why was i here to begin with?.

The answer is I don't know I'm just here.

I felt my conscience looking at me,tapping its foot.

I breathed again and then knocked on her room.

" I'm coming give me a second. "She shouted with her tiny voice.

I sighed at least she wasn't sounding angry.

But she will see you, what will happen. My inner voice asked.

I was still listening to my inner voice when her voice startled me." What on earth are you doing here".

Panic squeezed the breathe out of my lungs, rendering me incapable of making any kind of verbal response.

"Jon. I said what are you doing here". Her voice was charged with quiet fury.

I looked at her, her hair was bunched up on top of her head, she was still damp which means she was taking a shower, she was just covered with nothing but a soft short cream towel. This wasn't

making things easier for me.

" I...umm..ahhh I came to apologize...for..umm" I stammered.

"Apology accepted now leave." She said in anger.

"April please...--"

She interrupted. "What is it that you want Jon. What do you want and what are you apologizing for. I don't get you, one minute you're all caring, all sweet then the next moment you can't even look at me, it's like you can't even stand my presence, it's like you're disgusted by me. What is it that you want from me. Why are you here, apologizing, why are you here at this time of the night huh. Ok you apologized, apology has been accepted, now why are you still standing there making me literally to suffocate in your presence". She shouted and started breathing heavily.

I looked at her chest and wondered how an innocent act of someone angrily breathing be so sexually captivating.

She realized the way I was looking at her,mesmerized she stared right back into my eyes,her breathing suddenly laboured and shallow.Dizzily she blinked but without being able to break the intensity of my burning stare.Her body was starting to tremble, I secretly smirked.I got her where I wanted her to be with just a stare.

" P-please ...I-leave...right now".She said stammering.

I smirked."The heat is getting too much huh...its getting too hot in here,the room suddenly feels so small huh.Why are you trembling short stuff huh,is it the need that seemed to have been stored up somewhere, now its coming out of nowhere ready to cause destruction."I said walking towards her.

My hand was a span away from her now,she walked back from me,her eyes not leaving mine,until she was backed against the war.

"J-Jon". She protested shakily.

I placed my both palms flat on the wall,imprisoning her.

" L-leave please..."she protested.

"No...I'm ..not ..going... Not ..so.. fast".I told her softly, quietly,spacing every word,so that she could feel the warmth of my breath on her neck.

And then I lowered my head and kissed her with a mixture of passion and infused anger that left her helpless,my mouth burning hers as I refused to end the kiss,savaging her,punishing her,tormenting her with its burning heat.

My body has successfully divorced itself from the brain as my hands left the wall and cupped her tiny waist,my body close to the softness of hers,so close that I could feel the fierce pounding of her heart.Her arms reached out towards me,wrapping themselves around my neck.I urgently moved my hands down over her body coming to rest on the curves of her thick ass as I pulled her off the wall and into the warmth of my embrace. I dragged my mouth from hers,asi caressed her soft neck and shoulders leaving some hickeys.

"... P-please..s-stop...this is wrong...please" She managed to say.

I looked into her eyes."Do you want me to stop.. "

"Please stop...this..is wrong Jon..." She said her swollen lips trembling.

I kissed her hungrily one more time and then slowly removed my hands around her as she did the same.

I slowly walked out of the door and went to my car.

I roughly rubbed my head as I looked at my boner.I knew this was going to be a "survival of the fittest situations" with Danger. It wasn't helping that I was on stage two of Dissociative Identity Disorder.

I was in danger with Danger.

Gareth

"Squashed self-esteem".

I woke up sweating. It was the nightmares again. I didn't want to relive my past but I could feel the weight of my memories pressing down on me. I felt so dirty, so destroyed, so disgusted, so filthy. I jumped off the bed and went to take a shower. I scrubbed myself, I used bathfoam, trying to remove the dirt but still I felt dirty. I sat down and cried in the shower. Why did it have to be

me. Why me?

I walked out of the bathroom with just a towel covering my lower body, I sat down on the cold floor not knowing what to do next with the dirt that was all over my body.

That moment Kiara called, I sighed and answered on the first ring.

"Hello". I said with a husky voice.

" Hello Gareth I have an unsettling feeling.. Are you ok...?" She asked sounding nervous.

"C-can I come over to your place?" I said.

"Please come,I'm so worried about you.Drive safely if you're not in your right state of mind call your chauffeur. I'm waiting for you" She said and hung up.

Kiara has been the only person who has been giving me the mother's soft love I longed for.She constantly checked on me and asking how I.was doing.I had grown soft towards her and I was ready to confide in her, to tell her the demons that i battled with,the things that was done to me.

I wore my white trackpants and white vest,the took my car keys.

I drove to downtown like a maniac,as I parked .I saw Kiara pacing up and down outside.

I went out of the car,she ran to me and gave me a bone-crushing hug.Only my mother and her get this close to.me.Even my guys know that I don't tolerate skin contact, it cringes me.

She cupped my face."How are you.I just felt so weird lately, I couldn't sleep.I was so worried about you".

I couldn't contain it anymore I broke down in her arms.

"Ohhh my God Gareth what's wrong.Let's go inside,you will tell me everything ok."

We walked inside and went to her room.

We sat on her bed as I cried laying on her laps.

She continuously brushed my hair.When I was done letting it all out I was having hiccups.

She went to the kitchen and came back with a glass of water.

"Here drink this" She said.

I shook my head."No I only drink sealed bottled water,you never know the germs that might be hanging around that glass".

She gave me a stern look and went back to the kitchen. She came back with bottled water.I drank.

"Did you lock the door?" I asked.

She gave me the look again."Yes I did." She said.

"What's going ok Gareth.Tell me everything"

"My stepfather raped me" I said bluntly.

She covered her mouth as tears ran down her cheeks. She came and knelt besides me.

"What did you just say Gareth? How..when did that happen? Ohhh my God Gareth!"

"Remember I told you that he found I wasn't his when I fell off the balcony and I needed blood. After I was discharged from the hospital mom had gone other parent's house. So it was only me and him. I normally didn't sleep with my door locked so he just came in. He came in to bed and knowing that he was still my dad despite that I wasn't biologically his I let him. I thought he just wanted to snuggle with me since mom wasn't there after all it was winter. But then I felt his hand touching my dick and I asked him what he was doing....he...he ..showed me...a gun and ...told me to be quiet..I was scared... So..I kept quiet...He started giving mean handjob...I ..was on my early teenage years..and I had just started having wet dreams...so my penis erected....He was happy and told me that I wanted what he was doing to me...then..then..h-he inserted himself...in my anus....It was so painful.. I cried for him to stop...but the more I cried it was like I was encouraging him,he moved more faster more deeper. My cries were like music in his ears. After he was done he told me that I was being punished for my mother's sins then walked out leaving me broken and dirty like that.

Whenever he felt like it he would come and molest me. I couldn't tell my mom, I knew she was not going to believe me because after the truth about my identity was out its like she began to

love and obey him more. When I was 15 that's when I moved out of home. I had saved up my allowance so I bought an apartment. I stayed alone, I played on my own because I thought people would see right through me. I never had a girlfriend because of that. But then I met my friends, yes they know nothing about this, I never told them but they never judged me and they were there for me. That's my story Kiara".

She cried as I narrated my story to her. "We have to report this." She said.

"With what evidence? It's been 14 years since this happened. Besides I can't let everyone know about this, it will make it in the headlines, everyone will be disgusted by me. Everyone will laugh at me, they will look at me differently, they will pity me, they will judge me. I can't I just can't." I sighed.

"I'm here for you, whatever you decide to do I'm always here ok. One way or the other karma who will visit that man justice will be served but Lewis, Max and Jon should know about this. They are your friends they should know. Tell them when you're ready. For now Gareth I want you to take me to your house there is something I need to see." She said.

I obliged and drove her to my house.

When I opened my door her jaws dropped,she covered her mouth with tears dropping.

"Take me to your room.I want to see something."

I obliged again and led her to my room.She went straight to my walk in closet.

"Almost everything here is white,gold or silver .Your clothes are white and ash grey.Why do you favour such colours?" She asked.

"Because I can easily spot dirt" I said sounding confused.

"That confirms my suspicions." She whispered. She held my hands.

"Sit down Gareth I have to tell you something and I hope I'm not right".

" What is it?"I asked.

She sighed."Look I need you to understand this.You're very normal everything is ok but if my suspicions are correct Gareth you're showing early stage symptoms of a mental condition called Obsessive Compulsive Disorder popularly known as OCD".She said.

End of chapter2 1

Sorry for the typing errors.

Let's comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 2

April.

"He is being weird again".

"Helloo you zoned out again wassup with you April today". Jenny said snapping her fingers on my face. I was lost I was thinking about yesterday, I was still thinking about how he held my waist, how he stole my first kiss, his sexy lips ohhh gosh.

" Umm its nothing you should be worried about" I said avoiding her piercing eye.

"Ok out with it girl. Yesterday I heard you shouting at Jon obviously and today you have love bites. What am I missing". Thank God Kiara and Nicki weren't there otherwise I wasn't going to be able to bare the interrogation.

"Jon kissed me." I said.

She opened here eyes and started screaming. "Ohhh my God I saw this one coming. I cant wait to tell Max about it.We knew you two have undeniable chemistry. Ohhh my my..."

I rolled my eyes."The kiss doesn't mean anything ok.I know today he is still going to treat me like something disgusting."

"Ohhh hell no,he ain't gonna do that.Wait a minute....April you have feelings for Jon" She shouted in excitement.

"No I don't." I protested.

"I mean why would I,he has a girlfriend he loves so much and we works with Julian.I will the stupidest girl if I fell for him".

She raised her eyebrow, I knew she wasn't convinced. Before she could respond Kiara walked in. She dragged herself lazily and threw herself on the couch. When Kiara is like this, then it means something is wrong.

Jenny and I looked at each other and walked over to her.

"Girl what's wrong." I said sitting besides her. She threw herself in my arms and sighed deeply.

She looked at me. "Ummm April. I just wanted to know out of curiosity. What are the symptoms of Obsessive Compulsive Disorder." She asked.

"Why are you asking about OCD all of a sudden". Jenny asked.

" Like I said,I'm just curious "She replied.

" Ok OCD usually someone who has it is squeaky clean.Victims are afraid of contracting germs.During the first stage their obsessions will be like washing hands constantly with sanitizers, they like wearing white clothes because it would be easier for them to spot dirt.Then on second stage they shower a lot,they hate skin contact,they dislike using door knobs because everyone touches there,they favour using sealed things ummm what else yea at times when they are showering they might end up hurting themselves ,then the last stage is very dangerous people on the last stage of it often live in isolated mental asylums because they will be dangerous if you sneeze or cough in their presence without covering your mouth they might kill you because in their minds you will be trying to spread germs.Then the compulsions are the same despite which stage so constantly check if the door is locked,if the lights are switched on or off and if the electrical gadgets are turned off,that's their compulsions is something they won't be able to stop. "I explained.

Kiara sighed." C-can it be healed when its on the second stage ".

"Yes it can be healed if the victim is treated quickly before its too late." I said.

Jenny shrugged. "What causes the condition though?"

"Umm sometimes the victims were raped so they would be feeling dirty or they might have witnessed a murder." I said.

"Who has it Kiara why are you asking about it?" Jenny asked.

Kiara snapped. "I told you before I'm just curious ok".

I sighed."Gareth will be ok Kiara.It wont even reach stage three.You should refer him to Doctor Gomez I'm sure she will be able to help him".

"Gareth has OCD!?" Jenny exclaimed.

She froze."H-how did you know...about Gareth".

"Well i dont know what happened to him but i realised that he wears white all the time and I saw him at some point wiping off the door knob before touching it.He drinks only bottled water.Am I right." I said.

She sighed. "Yes you're right. Its on stage two. I hope he will be ok."

I softly rubbed her shoulder. "Don't worry about it. Refer him to Doctor Gomez and make sure he doesn't stay in public places because the more he stays in public then the more he will be afraid of contracting germs. He will be fine you don't have to stress about it. Be there for him always and explain to him that he is not crazy because he might hurt himself" I told her and stood up.

"Now I have to go and face my own demons" I said.

"Ohhh yesterday Jon came what happened".

Jenny was ecstatic." They kissed!"

"Whoa I didn't see this one coming. I knew that the ice shoulder will drive him crazy.Man like him want attention and if they don't get it they go crazy but do you think maybe he feels something for you" She said.

I sighed." If you want to know that a kiss sometimes means nothing ask Jesus about Judas.Let me bounce,I'm almost late".I took my phone and ran to the taxi rank.

I was hell nervous about seeing Jon especially after the yesterday's scenario.

When the taxi dropped me off I did a breathing exercise before ringing the bell.The door opened and well Jon stood there looking all kinds of yummy.He was wearing all black. Black biker jacket,black ripped T-shirt, black jeans and black sneakers.He looked so good in casual.

He beamed in excitement. "Appie"

He then gave me a bone crushing hug.You would swear he last saw me a year ago.

"How have you been". He looked into my eyes with his icy grey eyes but I swear yesterday they were seablue.Then I felt the chills,the cold chill. How do one person give me different types of

looks which have different effects on me.I wondered.

I pushed him off softly. "Ohhh you expect me to be ok after you just kissed me like that and now you're hugging me.What are you playing at Jon" I said folding my arms.

He looked shocked like I had said something shocking.

He breathed heavily. "Come in..."

He then just walked away leaving me confused.I went and changed as usual and started doing my job.My mission of the day was to at least enter into his study and see how things are.

Anyway I was cleaning in the kitchen when he just entered holding a medical kit.

He strongly held my hands and forced me to sit down.The look he had on his face even scared the shit out of me.It wasn't the friendly look but an angry look.I wonder what could have happened that pissed him off like that.

"W-what are you doing?" I asked.

He ignored me and took my hands then started to apply some ointment on my knuckles. Then it clicked that he was treating my bruises after I had punched the old man.

He was really weird, I mean how can he be so angry and caring at the same time. Who does that?

While he was still on it, the door opened and Miss World walked in.

I sighed, I knew she was going to create a fuss. Her eyes were already glassy she was about to cry. Like seriously. If she knew that her man kissed the hell out of me then she would commit suicide.

"Babe". She said her voice shaking.

Jon just looked at her and continued what he was doing.

"Babe what are you doing?" She asked making her way to us.

That was just a stupid question though.

"I don't have an energy for your fuss right now. Find yourself something to do." Jon said coldly like very coldly. That even surprised me.

She ran upstairs crying but the man here didn't even give a fuck.

"Jon what's wrong with you". I asked after he was done applying the ointment.

"Dee".He said with his cold look.

"Dee or Jon its the same its still you.What's wrong with you?" I asked.

"What is wrong is you did no effort to stop me from kissing you...you allowed me to kiss you" He said clenching his jaws.

"Ohhh really now its my fault that you came to my place and a move on me huh.You're the one who pinned against the wall and now its my fault.You should thank me anyway that I managed to stop you before you could remove my towel and --" Before I could finish he interrupted.

He threw a flower vase against the wall."Stop... Stop...I don't wanna hear it....I don't wanna hear another word you have said enough. How could you have allowed something like that to happen,you should have stopped me before I even kissed you before I even touched you."He said still clenching his jaws.

I laughed in disbelief. Was this guy drunk when he kissed me,had he lost his mind for a moment. How can he regret the moment that we shared last night like this. "Now its my fault Jon.Its my fault really.You shouldn't have come to my place to begin with,you shouldnt have come.You're unbelievable you know that.Yesterday you came looking all kinds of sorry then today you're ready to throw fits at me for something you did.. seriously."I walked angrily to the kitchen and found some helpers evesdropping.I didn't give an F about it.I started loading almost all the kitchen utensils in the washing machine.I heard thing breaking in the lounge.

I went to chekc and Jon was busy smashing every frame every vase on the wall.

How can kissing me turn him this crazy. I really thought he had enjoyed this in as much as I did but then I guess he was drunk,I was too foolish not to notice.

I saw Ruth screaming running downstairs.

" Stop babe what's wrong with you" She said.

He started breathing heavily looking at her.

"Go upstairs before I do something I will regret."

She ran like her life depended on it. He looked at the maids who were in the room. With just his cold stare everyone ran back to do their business. I remained standing, I don't even know where I got the guts though. I have never seen Jon this angry, it was new to me.

"Leave Appie before I do something I will regret. Leave." He roared again.

I remained standing without even moving an inch.

"Didn't you hear what I just said" He shouted and any normal person could have shit in their pants but I remained motionless. I have lived with crazy people and very dangerous they did no harm to me so if he was going to throw a vase at me I was going to duck.

I took one flower vase and looked at him. "You're angry that I allowed you to kiss me right, you're angry because you literally cheated on your girl right. I'm going to help you break this vase because I'm also very angry, I'm angry because in as much as I hate you right now I still don't regret a thing about what happened yesterday". I said.

Its like I added fuel on the fire he just gave me an angry look, smashed the vase and walked out.

Everything in the lounge was a mess everything made of glass was smashed the big plasma included.

He sure has some anger issues that one.

The other helpers came and assisted me in cleaning the broken glasses.

Ruth came and asked me to follow her. I really wasn't in the mood of her nuisance but I obliged.

"What is it." I asked as we stood on the passage way

"What was it that you were talking about with Jon, why was he angry and why he treat me like that...He is mine you hear ..what did you do you whore, what did you tell him about me, why was he angry huh?" She said angrily gripping my arms.

I had had enough of these two crazy lovers. I slapped the shitness out that contoured face. She looked at me in shock, I blessed her with another slap on the other cheek.

"Now you will listen to me carefully. Firstly I'm not a whore and even if I became one I will still slap you if you call me that. I have already had enough with your crazy boyfriend and now you. If you two are having issues solve them and stop venting it on me because we will have problems. I can't give two on my neck all day acting like you just escaped from the mental asylum. Are you crazy... what can I possibly do to that boyfriend of yours huh.. Leave me and my miserable life alone don't add to my problems because next time I won't be this nice have I made myself clear." I shouted

She started sobbing. "I'm not crazy ok. I was just worried... Sorry.. sorry for everything but I love him. I tend to go over the limits ok. I'm not crazy ok. I just love him that's all. I can't imagine my life without him. I feel threatened by your presence because you're all kinds of sexy any girl could have been threatened too I mean have you looked at yourself."

"Whatever stop being on my case". I said angrily dragging myself down the stairs. Let's hope the slaps placed some senses in her head. I went back to the lounge everything was almost in

place, the broken TV was removed and two guys were already working on replacing a new one. Talking about money.

I started helping out to dust off things.

Jon walked in again with his angry look on. He marched upstairs and later came back dragging Ruth by her arm who was screaming her lungs out. He opened the door and pushed her outside. Everyone continued minding their business in complete silence, you could even hear a needle fall.

"The last time he was like this is when he found out that his fiancé was cheating on him." Lily whispered to me.

His fiancé? He had a fiancé? I asked myself.

"He is uncontrollable when he is angry." She said. I remained quiet. Jon really had anger issues I'm sure. I mean how can me not stopping him from kissing me turn him this savage.

A part of me was hurt, I mean had imagined that we would spend the day throwing awkward glances at each other in a cute manner you know but having to realize that he actually regrets it, pained me.

I was minding my business with Lily in the kitchen when he walked in shirtless, wearing sweatpants only and his torso and packs were out in all their glory. I realized that he had small tattoos here and there but now he had a new tattoo on that covered his whole left arm. With that scary facial expression on he looked dangerous, seductive, hot, sexy and all kinds of James Bond.

My throats were dragged back to reality when I felt his strong hand gripping tightly on my arm. He was dragging me upstairs.

"Let go of me". I shouted but it fell on deaf ears.

He led me to his room and locked the door.

He closed the distance between us, pinned me against the wall and tightened his grip.

" Stop it....What are you doing Jon?"I asked with a shocked expression.

"Did you enjoy the kiss?" He asked firmly and with a serious look on.

I laughed in disbelief. "Are we still on the kiss issue,I seriously thought we were way over past that. And seriously you expect me to answer such a ridiculous question.Was kissing me really a

grave mistake you ever made".

" Answer the damn question? "I swear I saw veins popping out his forehead.He tightened his grip.

" Let go of me."I could feel tears threatening. I was hurting. Jon McClain was manhandling me.

"Not until you have answered the question. Was the kiss really that good.Did you enjoy it?Tell me exactly how you felt about it?"He closed the zero space that was left between us,that we were even exchanging breaths.

He looked at my neck and frowned." The love bites too.Did you enjoy it when I marked you?"

I bit my lower lip."Let go Jon please".

"Dee" He demanded again.

"What difference does it make you're Jon you're Dee.Please let go" I said softly.

He breathed heavily with anger and held my tiny waist tightly against his body.I could see his lips trembling in anger.

"You enjoyed it didn't you?"

There wasn't time for me to feel frightened or to do anything more to express my outrage as he lowered his head and covered my half opened mouth with his.I didn't know what to do I mean one minute he is angry that I kissed him and the next moment he is kissing me.I felt lightheaded I felt the cold chills down my spine.This kiss was nowhere close to that of the previous night.That one was gentle, passionate and sensual. It made my knees weak but this one was a kiss more of anger and seduction. It made me want to rip my clothes off and

My body softened, I touched his head and gently pulled his hair.A groan of sensual pleasure came out of his throat,I felt his boner on my stomach.

He lifted his hand from my waist and ripped my uniform apart.

We all know I'm not a fan of bras.Within a blink we were on the bed.

He took one nipple and sucked on it while giving the same attention to the other with his hand.I moaned.He went on and on leaving me helpless,wanting more.

He kissed me again,got off the bed and then walked away.I wanted to cry,scream and shout.

How could he leave me hanging like that, horny like that.

He came back with a T-shirt and threw at me.

He smirked while walking away.

I felt tears filling my eyes. How could he do me like this. I dragged myself to the bathroom and wiped myself down there I was dripping wet and wore the T-shirt which reached my knees, that too smelled like him.

I walked out of the room. I met the helpers on passageway and they gave me questioning looks but I didn't care, I wasn't going to stay for a minute longer at this place not after being tormented, punished and savaged like that. How could he?

I felt hands dragging me again. It was him again. He pinned to the wall and smirked. I wonder who taught him the smirk it made him look dangerously sexy.

"J-Jon" I stammered.

"Dee". He said firmly with his face on mine.

"Next ..time.. I..will..punish..you..even ..more" He said spacing out every word and emphasising on the word punish. He repeatedly kissed my neck and sucked on it. I was a mourning mess.

He then baby kissed me. "Have a good day Appie". He walked away.

I swear this time a few tears ran down my cheeks. How could he be so heartless.

I walked out angrily, despite the nasty stares I got from the helpers. I walked out and went into a taxi. The driver dropped me at Italia.

People were giving me nasty stares but I didn't care. Kiara walked to me.

"And now?" She asked with an eyebrow raised.

"Don't even start with me, I'm a horny mess and sexually frustrated... Don't even start. I think the mall will do me good right now". I didn't wait for her to respond. I just took my horny self back to the taxi.

Saul.

"Man up"

After my bedroom fight with Eve the other day we made up and spent the whole night making love. Everything was now fine between us after all no marriage is perfect right, marriage is not a bed of roses. She was now trying to be the perfect wife however I couldn't shake the feeling that she was up to something. I know my wife and when she is up to something I can easily tell.

" Babe will you be there when we welcome Max's kids home?" She asked.

"Yahh of course why would I miss that. Max have been a very lonely man for a long time and I can't wait to meet his kids as well as the famous girlfriend". I said shushing Ali who was making baby sounds.

Eve was applying make-up I guess she was going somewhere ohh I forgot we were having lunch with her friends so she had to look the part. Women sometimes!

Anyway after she was done we went downstairs lunch was ready. You would swear it was food for twenty people that was on the table but nuh it was only the six of us having lunch. Eve and me as well as two of her friends and their partners. They had their faces dolled up as well.

We sat down and exchanged friendly chats while feasting on the food. The ladies were laughing talking about their model careers and labels, whatever gibberish they were on about. Us the gents were just minding our own business eating our food.

" So when are you going to see the doctor?" One of her friends who had thick full lips which looked so unreal asked.

That caught my attention. "Babe are you sick, why didn't you tell me about it"

She laughed. "No honey I'm getting my womb removed". She just dropped the bomb and continued chatting with her friends like it was nothing.

"Ohh girl I'm worried though after the operation I mean the scar I hope it won't affect my career"
She said

"Naa there are special ointments for that it will disappear" One of them said.

I wiped off my mouth. "Eve upstairs right now!" I roared.

She didn't protest she followed like a lost puppy.

I dragged her inside our bedroom and banged the door.

She rolled her eyes."This is why I did not want to tell you about it because I knew you were going to fuss about it.Im not having another baby Saul.It took me a long time to get over the stretch marks and baby fat I'm not going through that again.Getting my womb removed is the best option I can't rely on pills because I tend to forget,I can't get an injection or IUD because it gets me fat.."

I felt like smacking her face but then I'm not a women beater.I was raised better than that.

"Are you even listening to yourself. You discuss things with your friends no not things but our private issues then get their approval without asking me first then put your final decision. This is about this family but already you had made up your mind to get your womb removed without asking me your husband.Did you marry yourself Eve.You discuss our bedroom issues out there like you're talking about designer bags.What is wrong with you?" I shouted.

She started with the water works again."I don't know what's wrong with you Saul every decision I make is wrong to you."

"You know what...why am I even wasting my time trying to talk to you". I walked out and went to my daughter's room.Luckily she was awake I took her and drove off to the mall.I needed to blow off some steam.

I decided to do some grocery shopping for my girl.I wanted to buy some formula for her but didn't know which one to go.for.I approached this lady/girl who was doing her things.

" Excuse me" I said and she turned. I almost choked on my saliva. I have never seen such a beauty in my life.

"How can I help you" She asked.

"I want to buy baby formula I don't know which one to go for. As a lady I think you're familiar with this area.

She smiled the most beautiful smile I have ever seen." I'm not really familiar either but how old is this beautiful chubby lil thing here". She said playing with Ali's cheeks who giggled showing her toothless mouth.

"7 months" I said.

"Ok so you should buy formula and porridge for a 7 month don't buy less r more it will be unhealthy for her". She took Ali from my arms while I threw things in the trolley.

After I was done paying I thanked her. She smiled and kissed Ali all over her face and walked away.

" Shit I forgot to ask her name" I cursed.

I drove back home after cooling off and found the father-daughter duo in the lounge. I ignored them and went to place Ali in her coat who was now fast asleep. I went back to the lounge and father was ready to murder me.

"What is it that I hear you making Eve cry.If she wants to get her womb removed its her choice not yours" He shouted.

I looked at Eve."So every time we have an issue you're going to cry to your father.As for you Mr Jackson you really have time to spare.What kind of a man are you who encourages her daughter such things.If it was your wife I could have said maybe but you seriously."I said

"Watch your tone boy.I made you!" He shouted

"Yes you're right you made me a miserable man I am today by forcing me to marry your disrespectful spoilt daughter.As for what I have today don't even say you made me because all that I have now is as a result of my hard work my blood, sweat and tears.Now you will listen to me I'm the man of this house Eve sucks my dick not yours if you continue this behavior of

interfering now and then in our business we will have problems. You don't want me exposing your dirty deals to the world now do you?" I know I sounded disrespectful but I had had enough.

He was shocked. "You wouldn't "

"Try me!" I said walking out leaving the duo shocked like that.

End of chapter2 2

Sorry for the typing errors.

Let's comment and share.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 3

"A new puzzle piece".

After unwinding at the mall,I was feeling a lot better.I went back to our apartment. I found Kiara and Jenny well it seems Nicki was still with Lewis.They both looked at me and Jon's T-shirt that I was wearing.

"And now?" Kiara said sitting down.

I just rolled my eyes and started explaining what took place from Jon's anger to where he left me hanging.

"So you're saying he was angry because you didn't stop him from kissing you then later on he kissed you. That's confusing though, why would he do that" Jenny said.

"Maybe he was drunk when he came here yesterday. God knows what he had before coming here." I said sighing.

"But how can he be so angry to an extent that he breaks things?" Kiara asked.

"I suspect he has anger issues that one. Maybe there is something going on in his relationship with Ruth that he is venting out his frustrations. After he dragged Ruth outside he took me to his room and did all sorts to me. I can't help but feel like he was using me you know. Does it mean that whenever he fights with her he is going to come to me. This whole thing is confusing and

stressing." I said.

Jenny smiled."Enough about the stressing part ...tell us how was the whole making out thing though".

I smiled remembering when he tore my uniform apart."It was amazing. I really didn't know the feelings that I was having right there.Yesterday well he was gentle and soft it made me shiver.It made me imagine like I was in some romantic film where everything is red and roses but today he was angry and the way he was kissing me it was like he was hungry for my lips..it made me want to be a bad girl a very very bad girl.It made me feel like I was in some action film you know what I'm saying where everything just has a lot of adrenaline".I said with a naughty smirk.

Kiara laughed."I take it Jon can be everything... He can be gentle or hard as fuck".She highfived with Jenny and I looked confused.

"Ohhh you're still so innocent but you will know everything soon".

I just decided to let it be since they were not going to tell me what they meant anyway.

I went to my room and removed Jon's shirt.I had his scent all over me.

I looked at myself on the mirror I had love bites all over my neck suddenly I felt this ache,the need of him deep,buried...

I shakes my nasty thoughts off and took a cold shower.I wore my baggy T-shirt and tied my hair into a messy bun.

Kiara budged in,well she really doesn't have manners that one.

" There is some guy who is here to see you".She said.

"Some guy?" I wondered who could it be.I followed Kiara to the kitchen and found him sitting on the kitchen chairs wearing a hoodie.

"Beiley!!!" I screamed and within a minute I was pinning his head against the table.

"What the hell are you doing here. Did Julian send you?" I asked pinning him even more.

.

He groaned. "Hear...me out please.."

I roughly released him. "Talk now, what do you want?" I asked clenching my jaws. This guy right here used to be my one and only brother. I used to love him because he was so overprotective and he loved me well that's what I thought until the day he stood in the witness box claiming that I had poisoned Julian just after he had promised to stand by the truth.

"How have you been little sis?" He said.

"Little sis my foot,I don't have time for chitchats Beiley.Do you maybe have a message from Julian that you want to deliver,say it and leave." I said angrily.

He sighed."The prison and mental asylum really changed you.You used to be one sweet soul but now you have this amazing strength and the sweet April is gone.I know what happened five years ago was not fair.I'm not really the enemy here April.Trust me I really wanted to tell the truth that day but mom threatened me saying if I was to tell the truth they were going to abandoned me.Since that day when I testified against you in court I have been living with guilty. I couldn't believe that I was also part of the reason why you were framed when I suppose to protect you like a brother should. I'm not here justify my actions at all,I feel like I'm not even worthy to seek your forgiveness April.I couldn't come visit you because I couldn't master the courage. I know its going to take years or forever for you to trust me again but trust me I'm a patient brother, I will wait."He said wiping off the tears that were now falling down his cheeks.

I laughed my ass off."I can't believe Julian June at all,after failing to kill me twice she decided to come up with a whole new plan.Now she sent you so that you can gain my trust and lead me astray right. I must say you're really good at acting Beiley but this girl right here this April right here can no longer be fooled.Now you ass up,go back at tell that mother of yours that this plan again failed."

He sighed."I knew you were not going to believe me at all and I don't blame you.But if I was on

my mother's side I shouldn't have stole your real medical reports from her and gave them to doctor Jones."

That caught my attention. "He told me that he had the real medical reports all along" I said..

"Yes he told you that because I asked him to.I didn't want to reveal anything yet.In fact my plan was to come here with full information about your father but I couldn't wait that longer anymore." He said.

I sat down."What are you on about Bailey?"I asked.

"I have been helping you from afar April.I stole the medical reports and this place you're staying here it actually belongs to me.I really wanted you to live in a luxurious apartment but I knew

mom would be suspicious. The restaurant you work in belongs to me, I mean come to think of it who would employ someone who was imprisoned for poisoning her mother's food to deliver meals for their customers. I had it all planned out and I asked Doctor Gomez to step in. The money and groceries she gave you were all from me. I'm not saying I'm a saint and I'm not saying you should trust me. You have all the right in the world to hate me, I will take it, but I'm not the enemy here April."

I was shocked yes but Bailey has always been that caring kind guy that I was surprised the day he testified against me. My gut feeling doesn't fail me and this time it was telling me that everything is alright. I wasn't going to trust him that quickly though but I was going to give him the benefit of doubt.

"So why are you here today, why now. I bet Julian will be on your tail once she finds out." I said.

"I have some information that I think might help. I take it you're already looking for your father." He said.

I sat attentively. "Yes yes I'm looking for him, what information do you have?" I asked.

"Remember when mom sent people to kill you the day before you were released. I could have stopped it have I known that I was plan.However they never involved me in their plans after your court case because they knew how much you meant to me.Anyway I overheard mom and dad's conversation.You had lost blood right and the person who donated blood for you back then when you were in the hospital is actually your father.Apparently from what I heard he is a powerful man April,he knows about you and your whereabouts but I guess he is keeping things this way to protect his image.I don't know who he is though but when I overheard them I could pick that he is a powerful man.Also someone is helping mom and dad in all of this, they are not really doing this alone.I'm afraid that when the truth about your identity is revealed a lot of things which are supposed to stay in the dark are going to come to light,they are a lot of secrets April.A lot!" He said shaking his head.

I sighed.I knew he was telling the truth,after allback at the hospital I got an anonymous blood donor.Beiley really couldn't make that up.Another part me was hurt my own father too didn't want me to know him because he was protecting his image.

Beiley held my hands."I know this is all hard on you but you really have to be strong.The other reason why I strongly believe that he is a powerful man its because when you were in jail we

suddenly becoming rich. I think that your father made a deal with mom and I think it was that when you turn 18 you will own some companies maybe as way of compensating for not being in your life, but mom being greedy decided to have it all for herself. I also think that this man who could be your father is not taking action against mom because mom can reveal the truth. Anyway I have to go now, I will call you I have your number."

He stood up and wore a fake moustache and a wig.

"And now?" I asked looking confused.

He laughed. "Disguise sis. You never know who is following me and besides you never know maybe that father of yours has people watching you. Anyway I will update you if I find out anything wait for my call". He kissed my cheek then walked out.

I was puzzled, shocked, confused, hurt you name it. I had a feeling that Beiley was telling the truth. That hurt me even more, the man I was trying so hard to find was doing his best to stay away from me. Was I really cursed that both parents wanted nothing to do with me. The mother loves money and the father his image is more important.

Kiara and Jenny came and hugged me because I was wailing. I didn't know what to do anymore I was risking my all to find my father but he didn't want to be found. For how long was I going to love without knowing my surname or where I come from.

"Sssshhh its going to be ok". Kiara rubbed my back while Jenny gave me a glass of water.

" We heard everything. You will be fine at least you have a hint at who your father might be" Jenny said.

I chuckled. "A hint?This has already created another puzzle for me,they are so many powerful man in Georgia.Who could be my father?"

Kiara sighed."Can you really trust what your brother said though ".

I sighed." Beiley is never good at lying, that I know about him. Yes its not easy to trust him but whatever h said I have a feeling that its the truth. I mean remember you guys saying my blood was rare bit luckily I had an anonymous doner. It kinda makes sense whatever he told me. I badly want to know who might be my father but I have a feeling that the closer I reach the truth the more I will be disappointed, I feel like when I know who he is I would wish I had never known." I wiped my tears off.

"We are there for you always ok" Jenny reassured.

I nodded my head. "Thank you. Let me go and rest. Today really wasn't my day, I had to first deal with Jon's weird behavior and now this. I'm going to go crazy".

I shook my head while going to my room.

When my head reached the pillow I drifted off to sleep that's how tired I was.

Without sleeping for long I felt someone jumping on my bed.

I lazily opened my eyes and it was Nicki. I closed them again, I really wasn't in the mood for her I wonder who dragged her here, was the honeymoon moment with Lewis over?

After a few minutes cold water was all over my face.

"Nickiii!!" I shouted.

She laughed. "You sleep like you're competing with the dead. Wake up" She said grinning. I guess the old Nicki was back.

I dragged my sleepy self to the bathroom and she was on my tail. She sat on the toilet seat while I took a bath.

"Ohhh my my what bit you there on your nipple and your neck...a mosquito?" She asked sarcastically.

I rolled my eyes. "I take it the girls told you."

She laughed. "Yea yea I heard you were running around the whole town like a dog on heat".

I laughed "Are you kidding me seriously.."

"Well I imagined that. I can't believe I wasn't there to see your horny face, ohhh my i missed on a lot thanks to Lewis." She said smiling when she mentioned Lewis.

I raised my eyebrow. "He is treating you right huh.."

She blushed. "Well yea sending me to mufftown he is been doing that a lot".

I gave her a confused look

"What is mufftown".

She laughed." I tend to forget that I'm talking to virgin Mary don't worry you will know once Jon sends you there "

I frowned."Don't even mention that dog I don't wanna hear his name".

"Sexually frustrated. He really did a number on you" She laughed her ass off.

"Don't even go there ...I was throbbing and wet down there but he just got off the bed threw a

shirt at me and smirked walking away can you believe it. I cried ."I said frowning.

Nicki laughed even tears were coming out of her eyes." I never thought I would live to see this day".

Anyway I finished bathing and we went to the lounge.It was already past eight.Luckily Lewis had bought a lot of food so there was no need to cook.

Nicki was ecstatic. it was always Lewis this Lewis that.

"You're whipped and real bad." Jenny remarked.

Kiara smiled."What are you guys though? A couple?"She asked looking at Nicki.

She shrugged." Lewis just came out of a long relationship a lot has happened in his life.I on the other hand never really had a boyfriend and have been through a lot. We both need to heal from this. For now I don't know what we are but I'm enjoying what we are doing "

"You mean incredible love making ?" Kiara asked.

"No we are not really having sex but he is been giving me good muffs that sends me to the seventh heaven.But having sex with him wouldn't be a bad idea after all we once did it before."
She said.

I threw a fry at her."What you're doing there is adultery Sex is made for people who are married".

She rolled her eyes. "Show me Adam and Eve's marriage certificate ". She said, Kiara and Jenny started laughing.

" Look at who is talking about sex being meant for married people not long ago you wanted Jon deep inside of you" Jenny said.

I tightly closed my legs to the thought of it, that even made them laugh even more. "Look at you ...you're already imagining things." Nicki said laughing.

Before I could retaliate the door bell rang.

Nicki went and answered.

"Ohhh my my look who is here looking all kinds of yummy and tempting.!" Nicki exclaimed.

I knew it was him,I could smell his Cologne.I really wasn't in the mood for him especially after he "punished" me in the morning.

He stood there wearing black loose vest which showed his hard chest,a black denim short ad Gucci pushins.

The girls made those silly uuuuh sounds as he made his way towards me.

"That's a nice tat you got there." Jenny said looking at Jon's new arm tattoo.

He smirked and they screamed.I roles my eyes. "Thank you.Can I steal her for a moment" He said looking at me.

"Sure sure take her and quench her thirst" Nicki said laughing.

I was quiet. He just scooped me up in bridal style and took me outside to his car, I wanted to protest but he was too strong for me. We went into his car and he made me sit on his laps facing him. His hands brushed my thighs again I felt the ache, the need.

"W-why are...you here..?" I stammered as I failed to keep myself in composure.

He continued brushing my thighs. "I came to tell you something important but before that I have something else in mind."

"And what is that?" I asked.

He smirked again. "I should quench your thirst like she said".

He lowered the car seat and carefully laid me on it.

"W-what are you doing?" I asked.

"Ssssh Appie just let me". He removed my babypink panties,put them in his pocket and I did nothing to stop him.

He looked down on me."You're beautiful".

He said kissing me.

" Let me send you to mufftown".He whispered then went down there.

Whatever he was doing with his tongue was aaaamazing,I mourned my lungs out I swear the whole neighborhood head me.

After I released some juices, he licked me clean and kissed me again.

"Give me my panties back" I said shyly burying my head on his chest.

"I'm keeping them." He said looking serious.

"keep that cookie intact its mine".He said with a serious tone.

I rolled my eyes." Anyway what is it that you wanted to tell me?"I asked.

He sighed and rubbed his head."Well Appie,the thing is ummm...you know ahhhh...umm"

He touched his head again.

"Are you ok ?" I asked with concern.

"I'm having a headache, please get me some water". He said sweating.

I ran back to the house and found the girls peeping. I laughed and took some water to Jon.I found him holding his head.

" Short stuff".He said looking at me.

"Here you go,you wanted some water.How is that headache". I helped him to drink the water.

" What is it that you wanted to tell me?"I asked.

He looked at himself and frowned then back at me.He smiled and dragged me by my waist pinning me against the car.H egave me a slow,sensual,warm kiss and my knees were weak.

"I will tell you some other time ok.Right now I really have to go".

He perked my lips and drove off leaving me all confused.

I went back inside and the girls were already waiting for me.

" Out with it girl, every detail don't even lie because I'm sure everyone heard the ..."ohhhh Jon...ohh Dee" noise you were making."Nicki said imitating my voice.

"I really didn't know you were this bad...in the car girl...you're a very very bad girl" Jenny mocked.

I blushed covering my face."I think I now know what you meant by mufftown.I really didn't know people can do wonders with their tongue ".

They all screamed jumping up and down.

Max

" Girlfriend for rent".

Everything was finally falling into place. Jenny and I were pretty close now, very close.

I finally got the twin's custody and I must say I was ecstatic about it, I couldn't even hide it. Jenny and I had planned just a small intimate welcoming party for them. It was only going to be me and my guys as well as Jenny and her girls. I was going to introduce them to the rest of the family on a family dinner.

"You zoned out again, you're really ecstatic you should see your face right now" Jenny's voice brought me back to the present.

I smiled."I'm happy and nervous about it at the same time.I don't know if I'm ever going to be a perfect dad"

She brushed my cheek."You're a perfect dad and I will be there to help".

We drove to the orphanage and already the twins were ready to go.They were so happy.

"So daddy you said our house is sooo big right" Justin said

"Yes its sooo big" I said putting their seatbelts on."So if it is really big why is sister Jenny not living with us"Joyce has always been the smart one.

Jenny smiled."I will be checking on you every now and then.Remember I will be going to work so I really can't live with you because the house is far from where I work".Jenny managed to convince them.

We drove back home and they were so excited when we arrived.

"Ohhh my God this is beautiful!!" They both exclaimed. We escorted them to their rooms and they were more than happy because whatever they wanted was there.

Lewis came to me and we shoulder bumped.

"Man they are really beautiful kids you got there". He said.

"Yea right. Where are the others?" I asked.

"Where are the others.?" I asked.

Lewis scratched his head."We have a situation bro".

I panicked."What is it?"

"Relax man,its just that mom brought the whole Jackson army here.Instead of the intimate welcoming party we were planning she brought everyone from uncle Ken,there are like twenty people outside. Also since you decided to hide the fact that you introduced Jenny as your girlfriend to Eve we really couldn't cover up for you when she started blabbering about her.Mom really can't wait to meet Jenny.I don't think its going to be easy to escape this one bro". He gave me a pat on the shoulder and walked away shaking his head.He created this mess for me but now he was walking away.

I had to think fast,very fast.I went upstairs where Jenny and the kids were.

"Jenny can I talk to you for a minute" I said sounding nervous. I didn't know if Jenny was going to agree to this but I prayed she does.

"What is it you sound nervous?" She asked.

"Jenny I know this sounds stupid but can you be my girlfriend for rent,I mean my fake girlfriend"
I said.

She chuckled."I have done that before I mean with that Barbie cousin of yours,I'm good at acting
".

" This is different Jenny a part of my family is out there,my parents included apparently Eve
spread the news.I really don't know what she is playing at.All I'm saying is for now you and I
have to play along and allow everyone who really is not aware that we are so much in love and
we are planning to get married."I said softly.

She sighed and started pacing. "You're saying your family with parents included Max this is really big. I never had a boyfriend before I don't know how to act like a perfect girlfriend in front of her future in-laws".

She was really becoming nervous and time was not on our side. I grabbed her waist and kissed her so as to calm her nervous.

" You can do this ok just follow my lead. Remember we dated for a long time this is our fifth year. I met you when you were 16 in a restaurant, I fell in love at first sight ok. The rest just let me handle it ok".

She nodded nervously. I grabbed her waist and we went to take the twins.

We walked to the backyard and all eyes were on us. I could see Nicki and Lewis suppressing their laughter those two really have loose screws they need mental evaluation.

April was just standing there showing no expression that one is hard to read. Kiara and Gareth were missing. Jon on the other hand had Ruth by his side the girl was clung on him. I don't remember inviting her. Saul and Eve were there. Uncle Ken was not his boastful self I noticed.

"Ohhh my daddy that a beautiful sandcastle and it's so huge!" Joyce exclaimed

Mom was ecstatic and continued kissing Joyce and Justin all over the face. After I introduced them they ran to play with the other kids where they were eating snacks and all.

"Watch out don't trip". Mom shouted but it fell on deaf ears.

She came and cupped Jenny's face." You must be my future daughter in law.Ohhh my God you're so beautiful, no wonder my son fell for you..I hope we will get along I'm not really a monster in law".She said and Jenny just smiled.

Nicki couldn't contain herself anymore she started laughing you know the typical roar kinda laugh.Lewis was red all over his face because he was trying to suppress the laugh which he failed dismally as he joined Nicki.

Everyone's attention was on them."Ohhh Lwis dear that's funny did you see how Justin grabbed the chocolate the twins are funny really funny".Nicki said but we all know what they were laughing at.Mom just shook her head I bet she realised that the two had loose screws.

We sat down and started talking casually.

Jon was between Ruth and April I could see it was awkward for him.I saw Saul starring at someone and followed where his eyes were leading I almost choked.He gotta be kidding me.

Luckily the family didn't give us a hard time though with questions.We even told them that Jenny was Joyce and Justin's sister and they took it very well.

"So Jenny where do you work?" Eve asked.

"I'm a cleaner in a restaurant." Jenny said bluntly.

My dad stopped eating and looked at her. Everyone from my family did.

"I must say you're really cunning girl. You made a place for yourself and your siblings in Max 's life". Eve said.

April just galnced at her and I knew shit was about to go down." If I was you I would keep quiet you really don't wanna mess with Jenny in my presence. I won't be nice. Now start eating your food and stop being a killjoy".

That look even made my dad shift uncomfortably. uncle Ken stated eating his food without saying a thing.

Mom smiled."I don't really care about what you do my dear as long as you make my son happy then I'm happy" I sighed as I knew that the situation was under control now.

After eating we started talking and all that I approached Saul who was still starring at her.

"Man you're married you're even wearing a wedding band." I said sarcastically.

He laughed nervously. "You're reading too much into things".

" Naa man I know that look.That's Jon's girl".I said

He sighed."I met her yesterday man,I couldn't stop thinking about her.I mean those legs man damn...what's her name I forgot to ask?"

I laughed."Her name is Ruth Martins.That's Jon's girl".I laughed walking away leaving the bustard starring at her.

I managed to rescue Jon from Ruth.

"Thanks man". He said sighing. Lewis came and joined us.

" So what's going on.Ruth April here together. Jenny has been updating me on how you and April were making each other mourn in the car."

Lewis gasped looking at Jon."You're tapping it now?"

He rubbed his eyes. "That wasn't me ok that was Danger. I even found April's panties in my pockets. What happened is I went to apologize to April for my attitude then one thing led to another I kissed her ok. I don't know what she has that was pulling me towards her then after I left Danger took over. Somehow he found it that I kissed April he destroyed my lounge man and chased Ruth away. I know they didn't sleep together but I guess Danger licked her down there had they fucked she would be crippled till now. Today Ruth came crying and you know I hate making women cry I took her along with me, then boom April is here. Things are so awkward for me but April has everything under control. She is acting normal like nothing happened and its driving me crazy".

Lewis and me chuckled. "I don't wish to be you right now. Its already the survival of the fittest situation." We said in unison and laughed.

Jon rubbed his head. "And the dress she is wearing its driving me crazy...I feel like ripping it into two and just... "

Lewis chuckled. "That's Danger's girl Jon".

End of chapter2 3

Let's comment and share .

Apologies for the typing errors.

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 4

April.

"Get your priorities

straight".

I was truly happy for Jenny and Max,they were happy so I was happy for them.But deep down I wasn't happy for me,I wasn't happy for myself. Ruth clung on Jon like that didn't sit well with me.She was all touchy kissing the same mouth that kissed me,that did wonders to me.What angered me is Jon never did anything to stop her,she was busy tonguing the same mouth that tongued me down.

"Look at her eating that snack like she owns the place." Nicki's voice brought me back to reality.

I laughed. If Nicki hates you then whatever you do irritates her even the way you yawn can make her cringe.

"She wanted to ruin this moment for Jenny I felt like punching the shit out of her Lewis was even holding my leg under the table I was close to throw folks at her." She continued looking at Eve who was chitchating with some ladies Max's relatives I guess.

"Hey girl you're not even here. What's going on" She followed to where my eyes were leading.

"Ohhhh my dear. Now I see why you're upset. Don't mind them April". She said looking at Ruth and Jon who were all touchy.

I sighed." I don't get him though one minute he is doing wonders to me and the next moment he is with her.He is using me Nicki."I said sounding emotional.

Jenny came as soon as she realized what was going on."Ohhh girl don't even give him the satisfaction ok.I know he gives you good muffs but girl don't even get all emotional. I really can't believe that after he made you moarn like that he is here with you"Jenny said.

I rolled my eyes."I really didn't expect him to leave his girl because I opened my legs while he tongued me down.Ruth was always been his girl and I gotta accept that."

Jenny sighed."But did you see the way he throwing glances at you though.I'm sure the dress is driving me crazy,girl do you see the way its clung to your body its like it was made for you".

I smiled.Well I was wearing a black lace off shoulder dress with an open back and black pencil heels.Woman in black I tell you.Kiara had influenced it since she is the one with the fashion sense among the four of us.

"Well I gotta feel like a woman you know. Anyway I don't wanna ruin this moment for you let's be happy ok. You and Max both got the happiness and I'm happy for you guys. All I'm wondering is that for how long are you guys going to pretend like a couple and I must say you guys really act like you're a couple.. Is there something we are missing". I folded my arms and Jenny started blushing.

"There is nothing going on guys. We are just good friends and I'm helping him out here because he needs the help". She said.

Nicki and me just looked at each other and laughed. I was feeling a lot better after talking to my girls. After a while Max came.

" Ummm April can you please come with me. I need to talk to you. "He said and started walking not allowing me to protest. I followed him wondering what it was he wanted to talk to me about.

He led me to a room and then I realised it was a set up,actually he wanted me to talk to Jon.

" Max I thought that..."I said looking at him.

He looked at me with pleading eyes."Please talk to him he is literally going crazy...."

He walked out leaving the two of us in awkward silence.

He started walking towards me.I knew that his touch will make me go crazy."No don't... Don't even move an inch close to me.Don't even".

I said with a warning tone.

He rubbed his head. "Do you know what you're doing to me short stuff.The dress gosh....I feel

like.....short stuff you're driving me crazy right now.." He said coming towards my direction,grabbing my waist and smashing his lips on mine.Again my knees were weak and I just melted in his.Things were getting heated and I managed to push him off me.

"Stop Jon.This is not right,this is not fair and you're being very selfish right now.You have Ruth with you and now you're doing this to me.You want to have your cake and eat it too, how selfish can you be.The same mouth you used to pleasure me with,Ruth kissed that mouth and God knows you did the same with Ruth since she is your girl now you kiss me with the same mouth.You're so selfish Jon McClain.What is it that you want from me huh,is it sex that you want from me huh?" I asked with a serious tone.

He sighed."I don't know what I'm feeling for you short stuff,it's something strong and it scares me.There is something that is pulling me towards you,I can't stop it,I can't pretend and I can't lie.I'm feeling something and I can't even explain it.April I...."

I interrupted. "Mr McClain I wasn't raised to be someone's side dish,I'm not coleslaw my guy I'm the prime rib."

I perked his lips and walked out leaving him shocked or whatever the expression that was on his face.

I walked to my girls feeling myself. I was proud of myself.

"And then what happened?" Nicki asked.

"Well let's just say I set my boundaries, i can't have him using me like that". I flipped my hair and the girls laughed. I saw Ruth going straight to the room where I came from after a while she came back in tears.

Nicki chuckled. " If in a relationship all you do is to cry then you better ask yourself if you're dating a human or an onion ". She said loud enough for Ruth to hear.

I pinched her.

" What, why are you pinching me. I'm just saying and after all its the truth."

Ruth just continued crying and one of Max's relatives who was introduced as Saul came to her and gave her a glass of water. What a gentleman.

Eve gave her husband an evil eye and I just laughed, rich people and their drama.

We continued chatting and later on Eve came to where we were standing.

Nicki rolled her eyes. "Fake lashes are okay if they look natural but some of y'all bitches look like you gonna fly if you blink too fast."

She said looking at Eve.

I knew drama was about to begin and I wasn't ready for that. I had had enough with Jon's drama.

I pulled Nicki away. "Maybe we should go drink some wine or something".

Nicki was ecstatic. "Ohhh I would love to get drunk."

Lewis came out of nowhere and grabbed Nicki's hand. "You're not taking alcohol dear."

Nicki sighed. "Why not Lewis, you have been stopping me from taking alcohol lately, why?"

He grabbed her waist. "Because I say so please don't take alcohol. I saw how you were on Max's whisky and your intake really didn't sit well with me."

Okay I wasn't going to stand there watching them all lovey dovey. I gladly walked away.

Jenny was with Max so I was alone. If Kiara was here she could have been with Gareth.

I sighed looking at Max's big family.

His father and mother were proud of him you could see by the way they looked at her. I longed for that look I longed to have a parent that would be proud of me but I guess I wasn't just lucky both parents wanted nothing to do with me.

I was emotional as I looked everyone with their loved ones Nicki was there arguing with Lewis which looked cute, Jenny was leaning on Max sharing a sweet moment, Jon and Ruth were just standing there but at least there were there for each other, Saul and Eve were both looking cross but still they were there for each other while me on the other hand was just alone feeling

neglected. I decided to have a walk because the family scene at the backyard was suffocating me. I needed a family. At 23 I was single and never had a boyfriend which is really not cool at all.

I walked till my feet felt numb.

I sat down and started wailing. I was feeling very lonely. Yes I have friends but for five years I have been feeling very lonely.

I wailed till I couldn't anymore. I felt strong arms hugging me and I knew it was him.

"Cry it all out I'm here for you. I'm here Appie".

When he called me Appie somehow my heart leaped, I loved the sound of it. I screamed my lungs out while he held my arms tightly in his embrace. After venting it all out I looked into his icy grey eyes. He had his cold look on. I don't get him, no it's me I don't get one minute I want him to stay away from me but the moment he puts on that cold face which sends chills down my spine. I feel weak and it feels so right.

He frowned as he carried me to his car. "I don't like it all when you cry. I don't want to see you cry. What happened, who made you cry I will deal with them right now. I swear a bullet will go through their head."

I felt like he meant every word and that kinda scared the shit out of me.

"Ummm a lot of thoughts were just going through my head." I said

"What thoughts?" He said looking serious.

"You don't have to worry about. Its all sorted Jon". I said.

"Dee".He said with a firm tone.

"Anyway tell me the thoughts that were troubling you?". He asked.

"Its nothing Dee." I said looking out of the window.

"I broke off things with Ruth ..because it is you that I want Appie, I can't have anyone else expect you and you can't have anyone else either. You're mine,I'm yours". He said without even smiling at all.

" That sounds rather possessive don't you think.Besides I don't get you,why are you breaking things off with her anyway.Is it because of the encounter we had.Please don't tell me you broke things off with her on my account."I said.

Yes a part of Mr was kinda happy but I really didn't want to be the reason of their break up.

"Things weren't working. I hate weak women.I want you Appie.You make me feel foreign things I have never felt before.Whenever I look at you I just know that everything is going to be alright."
He held my hand.

"This is too overwhelming Jon what's going on." I said.

He tilted his head."How many times did I ask you you to call me Dee".

"What does it stand for though.?" I asked.

He sighed."Its stands for Danger.Well its my nickname because people say that ummm I'm dangerously handsome..so yea I grew to like the name".He was avoiding eye contact. I knew there was more to it but decided not to dwell much on it.

He made me sit on his laps and cupped my face. "I'm not aware of what im feeling,I never felt like this before,its foreign to me.Look I'm not a perfect man I have my issues.I'm not promising to be the perfect man for you because I would be lying. But I just want you to stick with me don't give up on me because you're the only sane thing in my messed up life.My life is fucked up Appie.Its not bed and roses for me and I need you by my side because you're strong woman I know you will be with me and you will never give up on me.When I first saw you the day I almost ran you over I couldn't stop thinking about you and it drove me to the edge because I didn't know what it was I still don't know bit I want to risk it with you,I want to figure it all out with you.Ever since I was created nothing made sense in my life but then you cane along. I just want you to be with me.Don't give up on me".He said with glassy eyes.

To say I was overwhelmed is an understatement, it was more than that.No guy had ever said such to me,it was new and hearing him say that it drive me crazy.I know it may sound wrong that he literally cheated on his girlfriend with me and now this but I wasn't going to deny what I was feeling, this guy here made me feel butterflies and things I never experienced before and I was ready to take the risk and experience more.

I cupped his face ad kissed him."I will take the risk with you Jon ok.We will figure everything out together ".

He frowned." Appie I said you should call me Danger."

I sighed."You sure do love your nickname huh".

He smirked."Because it sounds sexy when you say it.It makes me want to do a lot of dangerous things to this body."He said tracing his fingers on my thighs and butting his lower lip.

I smiled."Don't even we are in the car Danger".

He smiled as I said his name.

"I'm not hurrying anyway but I will be giving you very good muffs." He said smirking and I laughed burying my head on his chest.

My phone rang and it was Nicki. I answered. "Bitch where you at!!" She shouted.

"I'm okay Nicki. I will see you when I get home". I said

" Girl you with Jon ain't you...? "I just laughed and hung up.

" I think we should get going,they are probably worried about me" I said getting off his laps.

"Sure". He drove to the apartment. When we arrived we sat in the car in comfortable silence.

He held both my hands.

" Like I said I'm a messed up man Appie.I'm very messed up,its not even funny.But just hang in there for me ok I know some days I might act weird around you but please bare with me Appie.I will make things right,I'm just so messed up and I need you by my side".

He kissed both my hands ,he had teary eyes.

"I will stand by you Jo-- i mean Danger."

I perked his lips and one led to another I was now screaming his name in the car as he muffed me.

I came and he licked me clean,then kissed me.

"You should go your girls are probably worried". I perked his lips and he walked me to the door.

He held my hand.

"Remember you're mine Appie only mine and I'm yours only yours" He perked my lips and walked away.

I walked inside and the girls were already bombing me with questions.

"One minute you're angry at him and the next minute you're screaming your lungs out girl...seriously what's going on". Jenny asked.

I smiled." He broke off things with Ruth".

They all screamed."No wonder she was acting like she smokes panado.The way she was crying and rubbing her head you would swear she was going crazy."Nicki said.

"But Max's brother in law...umm Saul he is so sweet he managed to calm her down". Jenny said.

" However thee wide thee one with fake lashes ...yahh Eve she was giving him an evil stare ..I guess there is trouble in paradise".Nicki said.

"I would be mad too if Danger was to give attention to another woman." I said and they all gave me the look.

"Who is Danger now?" Kiara asked.

"Ohhh that's Jon's nickname. He kinda likes it when I call him that" I said shyly.

They all laughed "What are you? an item now?". Jenny asked.

" I don't really know guys but he is mine I'm his.Like a couple is supposed to tell each other that they love each other right.We haven't reached that stage yet but we belong to each other now."I explained.

Kiara laughed."I don't get Jon sometimes. He just broke off things with her girlfriend and already he got you.What is he playing at?"

I smiled."He just gave me different kind of vibe today.Like I talked to him before and made it clear that I wasn't going to be his side dish.Later on he came with that cold look on making it

clear that he broke off things with Ruth and he wanted me. I just couldn't resist him. I know it's crazy and sounds rather selfish of me but I couldn't hold back there was just something pulling me towards him."

Jenny sighed. "What if he finds out your motive April?"

"I will enjoy for now and cross that bridge when we get there. But I'm sure I will find out the information I want before he finds out why I'm in his life. After that I can live without the guilty conscience. I will just make sure he doesn't find out". I decided to change the topic because I didn't want to blow my bubble.

"So his is Gareth copying?"

"He was really worried. After Doctor Gomez diagnosed that I was right he has OCD he became so worried but I assured him I will be there for him. You will seeless of me here because I will be with him most of the time. He needs me but I convinced him to tell his friends what happened to him and come clean to the. Then we will work on his healing". Kiara said.

" What happened to him?"Nicki asked.

Kiada avoided the question."How are things between you and Lewis though?"

I knew there was something big no wonder Kiara avoided the question.

By mentioning Lewis Nicki became ecstatic. "He can be crazy and overprotective. Can you believe it he stopped me from drinking today.He was acting really weird".

We just laughed,after all Lewis and Nicki are just weird." So did you ever heard of that Zendaya again?"Jeny asked.

"No she never came back again". She said.

" If I was you I would be prepared for anything. I don't think she will just give up without a fight.Let me go and rest I'm so tired ".I went to my room and took a nap.

Without having slept that much I heard some noises in the kitchen.

I tied my hair and ran to see what was going on.

I found Nicki pinning Ruth on the ground.I was surprised,I mean I didn't even expect her here and how did she know this place.

" Nicki let her go."She released her.

"Ruth what are you doing here".

She just stood up charging at me ,for someone who was pinned on the ground she really had the energy. Luckily I was quick so I held both her hands.

" How could you...how could you take him away from me you whore....I saw you two...I followed you..I knew you had eyes on my man....he is mine..how could you do this to another

woman...you're a woman too but you don't have a heart".She tried to strangle me but I held both her hands tightly with one hand.

"Calm down will you" I shouted and she knelt down and held my leg.

"I'm begging you if its money that you want name the price I will give you but please don't take him away from me.He is my only last hope for a better future for me.I love him please don't take him away.This time it will kill me,I won't survive it this time around". She wailed and I knew that something was wrong.

I held her and helped her sit.

I asked Nicki to get her a glass of water she frowned going to the kitchen.Nicki though.

I helped her drink some water and now she was calm." What did you meant by it... What do you meant when you said it will kill me this time?" I asked with a serious tone.She shifted uncomfortably.

" Go ahead girl we know a crackhead when we see one."Nicki said.

I have her the look.

She shrugged."Whaaat its clear the girl has a loose crew in her head and she needs serious mental evaluation "

At this juncture brethren I give up.Nicki has a loose unfiltered mouth.

"What is going on Ruth?" I asked.

She started playing with her fingers."It all started when I broke up with my first love.I lost it because I always thought he was the one for me,I wanted nothing else.I started obsessing over his pictures,I stalked him and begged him to take me back.I made a complete fool of myself but then there was a psychologist in our family he noticed something odd.I dated the second guy and the same thing happened. Then my uncle diagnosed me with EUPD".She looked down

I stood up."You mean to say you have *Emotionally Unstable* *Personality Disorder*"

She nodded.

"But still knowing that my mental condition will lead me to fear of abandonment and obsessive love I risked it all just to be with Jon because I believed he was my world.At first I rejected him for a long time but he kept coming back I finally gave in.Seeing his patience with me I finally thought I had found the one who would understand me,love me and accept me for who I am.You know EUPD can only be cured if you find the one who truly loves you otherwise there is no solution to it and its really bad that I'm on the last stage.I don't want to risk anyone's life because most of the time I thought of killing you because I felt you were a threat.I really can't stop what I think and you know with this condition my emotions will be very unstable one minute I can be fragile and the next minute I will be angry.I'm already obsessed with Jon and I don't even know what to do.That's why I'm begging you please let him go..please you will be saving my life." She stood up.

"I'm recently having attacks.I'm so unstable lately I will leave before I commit a crime but please think about it I'm begging you please". She walked out.

The girls looked at me." What now?" Jenny asked.

"I'm choosing to be selfish. Today I choose me guys.Jon and I had just started whatever we are having and I'm loving it.This is my only chance of being happy and I'm not letting it go.I'm not letting Jon...I'm not letting him. He makes me happy,shiver,moarn,scream I'm not letting him go.Yes he is a messed up.man but we will clear the mess tigyuer.Just like how I'm trying to out my life together Ruth should do the same without having to rely on Jon".

I walked out.

Oh hell yes I chose to be selfish.

Danger.

" In love but unaware ".

I drank the fifth cup of coffee. Well don't be surprised I'm not a fan of coffee,if it was up to me I was going to drown myself in alcohol but I couldn't take the risk. I was avoiding to get drunk because I knew that I would get drunk and Jon would take over.Drinking coffee also would help me stay awake.I was doing this for Appie,my Appie.I didn't want to sleep because I knew Jon or

Joss would take over and that would ruin everything for me. I had just claimed Appie and she agreed to be mine. I didn't know what I was feeling but I knew the feeling was foreign. I wanted her to be happy as messed up as I am I was going to do my best to see her happy. Ever since I was created I never felt like this for a woman, this was new and it was scaring me. In as much as I claimed her I was afraid of fucking things up. I was afraid of sleeping forever. I was going to do my best so that I don't cease to exist. I knew Jo had eyes on my girl and as the owner of the body he has upper control but I was going to make sure that I stay up for long. At least I would be happy with Appie and if I sleep forever then I will sleep a happy man. Thinking of her made me smile for the first time in the nine years that I have started to exist.

My existence was for me to protect Jon from his last but with the way things are I might be forced to take him back to the past if I want to exist forever but then again I doubt he would be able to survive his brutal past and if he dies I will die too. I had to think of other plans without having to bring back his memories to him. I sighed and rubbed my head. I had to keep my anger in check if I wanted to stay for long with Appie.

I checked the time it was 3am and I was still awake not knowing what to do. I went on the internet to search for the things that makes a girl happy because I really had no idea at all. A lot of things was shown and it didn't impress me at all. Maybe I would just ask Max's advice.

I continued drinking my coffee and reading things until it was 6am.

I stretched and went to take a shower. After I was done, I called Appie.

She answered on the third ring with a sleepy voice. "Yes Danger". She yawned.

I guess she bought the nickname story I told her. Trust me I hate to lie to her but I didn't have much of a choice the last time I tried telling her the truth Jon overpowered me so I didn't want that happening.

"Appie did I wake you?" I said.

"Yes you did but it doesn't matter. Did you sleep well" She asked.

I scratched my head. If only she knew that I didn't sleep a wink. "Yes babe..ummm am i allowed to say babe".

She giggled. I know its creepy but that turned me on. Just hearing her voice my body was already hot that's the effect she has on me.

"Of course you're allowed to".

" You know what I'm coming over there right this moment. I feel like I haven't seen you for a year".I said.

I heard some shuffling. "No no you can't come now" She said in panick.

"Why not... Who are you with Appie?"

She just giggled and hung up on me.I wanted to throw the phone n the wall but I remembered I had to keep calm.I took one of Jon's jeep and drove like aaniac to her place.I know I'm messed up and I'm just an alter personality but I didn't want to loose her,the thought of it scared me.

I arrived at the apartment and knocked like a mad man.

One of her friends who I assume is called Nicki opened the door.

"And now?" she looked surprised.

"Where is Appie's room?"

I asked in panic mode

"Just go straight and turn left..the last room on the left". Wen she finished talking I was already knocking on Appies' room.

" Babe please open up.I know I'm messed up and I come with a lot of burden but please don't leave for someone else please ".I said knocking softly.

" Trouble in paradise already,you guys started seeing sack other for like an hour ago".Nicki said yawning while going to her room.

Appie opened and I gave her a bone crushing hug.I looked if there was any one around but there was none."Babe why didn't you want me to come,who were you with babe..please don't give up on me I just got you".

She looked at me with confusion. "Babe I didn't want you to come because I hadn't bathed yet.There was no one here".

I breathed heavily." I thought you were with someone.. I thought...I just--"

She cupped my face."Relax Danger relax there was no one here. You made yourself clear yesterday and I heard you".

"I'm just afraid I would lose you. Appie I'm so messed up and I'm afraid of you leaving me when I became too much." I sat on the bed.

She hugged me. "You're thinking way too much, you're not going to lose me ok. Now relax you're so tensed. Let's get into bed it's still like the middle of the night."

I sighed. "It's 7 am babe".

"Yes and I'm still sleepy. Let's cuddle".

She opened the covers for me and I got in. She then snuggled beside me. She felt sooo warm and it turned me on.

"Somebody is getting naughty". She said looking at my boner

" Wait till I shag you,you will be the one getting naughty.Now go to sleep".I kissed her forehead and she slowly closed her eyes.

I looked at her and knew that I have finally found peace. I had to give it my all to be strong and survive only for her.

End of chapter2 4

Let's comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

April.

"Moment for life".

I tried to go to the toilet but tight and strong hands were wrapped around my tiny waist. That's when it clicked Jon was here.

I removed the hands after a long struggle and ran to the bathroom. I did my business and bathed. I walked back to my room he was fast asleep. He looked so peaceful while he was asleep. He had his pink lips slightly pouted and he was snoring lightly.

"Ohhh my big baby". I perked his lips and he pouted them. It looked so cute, I even took a picture.

I went to the kitchen to make some breakfasts for my big baby. I was humming my song and minding my own business and Nicki walked in.

"Something smells nice in here" She smiled sitting down.

"I'm making breakfast for Danger" I said

She shrugged. "I will never get used to this Danger name of his it kinda creeps me out. Anyway

he came in looking like he was going to die poor guy was even sweating what did you do?"

I laughed "I did nothing actually he called saying he wanted to come and I panicked saying he shouldn't come because I hadn't bathed. So he panicked thinking I was with someone."

Kiara was standing on the door, she smiled. "He is afraid to lose you. It's hard to believe that he is crazy for you like that, you guys didn't get along at first. Well I guess love is just the best feeling ever ain't it."

Nicki took an apple and bit it. "You guys say love is the best feeling but I think finding a toilet when you have a diarrhoea is the best feeling ever".

I just laughed shaking my head "But it kinda scares me. Jon really is a troubled man. He has this possessiveness you know. I don't know it just scares me". I said putting the food in the tray.

"Maybe that's how he deals with those he cares for. But I wouldn't mind the attention though. I wouldn't mind a guy who is possessive but in a sweet way". Kiara said.

" You may say that. but I just don't know with Jon This whole thing of being his is freaking me out. I just hope it works out. While on the other hand there is Ruth. I know for someone with EUPD its goging to be very hard to deal with it". I sighed.

"I feel for you girl you have to be prepared for anything but on the other hand understand that its not really her fault." Kiara said. I just nodded.

" Appie..Appie...where are you..babe!!"

Jon was shouting from my room.

"I'm in the kitchen." I shouted back. He came in,almost running.

He hugged me,he was sweating again.

"Hey hey hey Danger what's wrong.What happened?" I cupped his face because he was panting and shivering.

"Why did you let me sleep.. You should have woke me up". He said hugging me but still shivering.

" Relax dear...sit down have some glass of water...God you're shivering.You looked tired when you came and I couldn't wake you,you looked so peaceful while sleeping."I helped him to sit down,he couldn't even hold the glass he was shaking.

I helped him to drink and after a while he calmed down. Nicki and Kiara were so worried about

him and it was making him uncomfortable, especially because of the way Nicki was glancing at him.

"Go to my room I will bring you some food". I said.

He kept on clinging to me.

I smiled. "Ok fine let's go together."

He held on to my waist while I walked to our room holding the tray. We met Jenny on the way.

"Ohhh you guys just look amazing together. Good morning" She said yawning.

"Morning morning" I said

We went to my room and we sat down.I held his hands

"What's wrong Danger?"

He shifted uncomfortably. "I...I just had a nightmare.I thought I was going to loose you so I panicked.I just don't wanna loose you Appie".

I cupped his face." I know you're troubled man Danger,I can see it but you're not going to loose me ok.Stop being afraid you will loose it ok.I ain't going anyway.Now let's eat".I said stuffing food in his mouth.

He began eating and smiling.

He fed me too.After that we cuddled again.

He was playing with my hair and I was drawing circles on his chest.We were in comfortable silence.You know sometimes silence is the best communication. You could feel there was a lot

of unspoken words between us. I was so worried about him, the way he was afraid to lose me raised questions in my mind. Did he perhaps lose a girlfriend before?

"You're turning me on." He said in his deep voice. I dragged my thoughts back to reality.

I chuckled. "Ok let's stop the cuddling before something goes wrong here." I got off the bed.

"I will come pick you up tonight. Right now I have to go see the guys, they have been calling, it seems like it's important". He said getting off the bed too.

"Ok then come pick me up at night then".I said.

He held my waist." The things I will do to you".

I giggled and kissed him."Now leave before things get heated up in here."He smirked and I walked him outside

When I came back inside I found Nicki was pacing up and down.

"Okay what's wrong with you?" I asked.

"I'm mad at Lewis very mad.." She said pouting her lips.

"What did he do now, things were ok yesterday. Waaait is it the alcohol issue?" I asked

She pouted again and dragged herself to her room without answering. Whatever Lewis did, he was in deep shit because she was in a bad mood. I just shook my head.

When I was about to go to my room, someone rang the doorbell.

I opened and it was Lewis.

"Ohhh hey Lewis how are you?" I said smiling.

He sighed. "I'm not really ok. Nicki has been ignoring my calls I don't know what I did. I have a

feeling she is mad at me but I don't know what I did for her to be angry she is not even replying my text." Poor guy was so worried.

"Nickiii....Nickiiii..!" I shouted,she walked in lazily.

When she saw Lewis she folded her arms and raised an eyebrow.I wanted to laugh but I suppressed it.Nicki really is a drama queen.

"Babe what did I do you're not answering any of my calls you're not even replying my text?" Lewis said looking worried.

Nicki pouted. "You called me stupid in front of everyone Lewis".

Lewis popped his eyes out." When did I do that and in front of who,why would I even call you

stupid??"

She shrugged. "I don't know them they were in my dreams..."

Lewis jaws dropped. "So Nicki you're saying to me you have been angry at me the whole morning, you were not taking my calls, you were not replying my text, you had me worried sick because I called you stupid in your dreams"

She rolled her eyes. "Yes and it was embarrassing. You should apologize".

Lewis just laughed. "Come here babe." He hugged her.

"I'm sorry for calling you stupid in your dreams babe that will never happen again. I promise it will never happen".

Nicki smiled." That's more like it,my dreams do come true after all".

I just laughed walking out leaving them all lovey dovey.

I went to my room and wore a denim jumpsuit.

I called a taxi and went to Italia.

Even though it belonged to Beiley it didn't mean that I was going to do as i please.

Talking about Beiley he called as soon as I stepped into Italia.He had texted me before informing me that I should wait for his call.

"Hey Beiley." I said.

"Hello sis ummm mom is planning to come see you.I think she is almost there,because she is not around here.She had man trailing you so they found out where you live and right now she is on her way to Italia because she knows that's where you at.I thought I should inform you so that you wouldn't be surprised". He said

" Its ok let's see what she wants to say".I said

He sighed ".Don't worry I have people protecting you nothing will happen.If you want you might move out from the apartment, I will sort something out for you".

" Don't worry too,I will be fine.You don't have to look for an apartment for me.I'm fine where I am".I said.

"I never thought one day I would have to protect you from our own mother." He sighed.

"Such is life Bailey". I hung up

I sat down taking a deep breath, now I had to face that demon again. That Satan's side chick.

I sat down for a while lost in my thoughts the I felt her presence.

I looked up and there she stood wearing Michael Kors head to toe with two bodyguards.

She smirked and sat down.

"I see you're doing just fine". She flipped her hair.

" You thought I would die after you tried to have me killed twice. You're really a coward Julian". I rolled my eyes.

She shifted uncomfortably.

I smirked. "You thought I was never going to find out about it. Like seriously who could be more evil than you in this world. How heartless can you be Julian huh. First of all you framed me for something I didn't do and secondly you tried to kill me not once but twice. What more do you want huh. Arent you tired.?"

She gave me an angry look. "They should have done their job, now I have to suffer for dealing with amateurs. You should be rotting in hell right now"

You think that hurt me, naa it didn't. To me Julian was just some machine which bought me to this world.

I laughed. "Ohhh that's not up for you to decide dear mommy. The one who should be in hell is you no one else. The reason why I'm not reopening this case and having you thrown into jail is because I need to find my father. I need my rights and all the money you're enjoying I know its mine. After everything is done im going to expose you and you will rot in jail or maybe in hell".

She giggled. "How are you going to do that because as far as I know you got no resources and

no leads whatsoever ".

I shook my head looking at her." I pity you,do you know why because the problem is you think you got the upper hand but trust me as poor as I am,I'm going to find my father.I don't care about the fact that he doesn't want to be found but still I'm going to find him.Whatever nasty secrets you're keeping I'm going to expose them.Start counting your days Julian because they are numbered."

"Fine whatever that's not why I'm here.I have a proposal.In fact I'm also here on behalf of that father you badly want to find" She said.

I raised my eyebrow. "What proposal?"

"How about this. I give you 3 million and you stay out my business. Invest the money or something but just get your ass off this case and start a new life somewhere. Leave Georgia and start afresh" She said taking out some papers in her handbag.

I chuckled in disbelief. "So what you're trying to tell me right now is to leave this place, give up on everything. Start afresh without even knowing my surname and where I come from. Is that what you're trying to tell me".

She nodded. "I'm glad you're clever the asylum did taught you one thing or two".

"Well there is something you missed being at the asylum taught me to be clever and right now I'm using what I learnt. This proposal of yours is stupid, very stupid. If you think you're going to throw a million at my face just to keep my mouth shut then you're gravely mistaken. This girl

right here is no longer that child you framed. I fooled death twice,I survived in the harsh conditions of the mental asylum but still I'm surviving, don't underestimate me Julian,give me some credit. You know you're always in my mind,I have bigger plans for you,bigger than your ego.Like I said your time will come,you days are numbered. I'm going to unfold the truth.As for that man who is my father,tell him that he must run as much as he want but I'm going to find him and the day I do he will wish he had used condom the day you conceived me because people like me Julian are damaged yes but we can sure make hell feel like home."I said looking straight in her eyes.

She stood up."I want to see you try.After all the sanme man you're trying to risk everything for wants nothing to do with you.He abandoned you just after you were born.No one loves you April,you were just a mistake and you will always be.If I was you I would stop all this because the more you try to find out the truth you will break and even if you know what the truth is it will destroy you,you will not survive it. "

"Run as fast you can tell him that I told you that,both of you are going to regret ever conceiving me,just wait for it". I stood up

She walked away with her guards by her side, people were looking at her, some were even taking pictures. I sighed. I was ready to break, I was ready for everything that was coming my way as long as I find out what the truth was.

I walked to the kitchen and started taking orders.

After a while I heard some commotion and went to see what it was.

Well it was Nicki shouting at some guy.

"Guys guys relax, what's going on?" I asked pulling Nicki off the guy's face.

"He smacked my ass can you believe it, he was busy trying his luck can you believe it. That's indecency!!" She shouted.

"Ok you did what?" I said looking at the guy. He looked down. Nicki was ready to attack him.

I held her."Nicki calm down ".

She roughly removed my hands." Never in the history of calming down has anyone calmed down by being told to calm down so don't fucken tell me to calm down because I'm not going to calm down."Okay why was she acting like she ate chillies in the morning

She went on the guy's face again.I felt pity for him,he made a wrong move to a wrong girl.Nicki was just spitting fire."Are you allergic to nuts?"She asked.

We looked at her with confusion.

"Yes why?" The guy answered.

"Because I'm about to kick yours up to your throat." With that said she kicked the guy on his balls. The poor guys groaned while nursing his nuts.

I dragged Nicki away because she was already blazing fire.

"Ok what's with the ratchet behavior Nicki?" I asked.

"He smacked my ass was I supposed to let that go. I should press charges". She said.

"Ok ok calm down did you take your antidepressants?" I asked.

She furrowed her forehead. "I'm not having an attack if that's what you're thinking?". She flipped her hair walking away. I guess somebody woke up on the wrong side of the bed. First it was Lewis, the poor guy and now me.

I shook my head walking away.

I checked my phone and Jon hadn't called. I was frustrated. I had missed him sooo much especially the cold look.

Maybe I should have gone to work at his house.

I sighed and continued working.

After I was done I went back home, when I saw a Bentley parked outside I was ecstatic I knew it was him.

I ran inside and went to my room.

He was setting a flower vase on my bedside the whole room had flowers and it smelt fresh.

" Heey". I hugged him.

He kissed my forehead. "Hey babe I'm sure you're strained. I prepared a bath for you. Go and take your time then after that we will go to my house. I'm sorry I had back to back meetings I forgot to call".

I perked his lips." Its ok,I like the flowers babe thanks so much.It smells so fresh in here."

"You're welcome, I just didn't know which ones exactly to go for" He said

"I love white lillies" I said taking off my jumpsuit.

"I will keep that in mind". He said.

I walked to the bathroom." Let me bath babe,I will be done in a few minutes".

He smirked."Do you want me to join you?"

I giggled "Hell no so that you can get naughty".

Well after bathing we drove to his house.All the way he held my thigh,stealing glances here and there.

" Focus on the road babe".I said.

He smirked."I can't get enough of that beautiful face.Anyway I have a surprise for you,I hope you will like it".

I smiled."I can't wait".

Gareth.

" Bad to worse"

We waited for an hour again, Jon hasn't arrived. Meanwhile the guys were updating me about everything that was taking place in my absence. I was just too absent minded to pay attention to whatever they were saying. I was just wondering how I was going to open up to them without them having to look at me differently and pity me. Kiara was by my side and she continuously squeezed my hand in assurance.

After a while Jon showed up...wait a minute that was Danger I could tell by the look and the dressing.

He was with April, well that's something new for me. They were looking all lovey-dovey. I chuckled shaking my head. I wonder when they reached this point. The guys didn't look surprised by this in fact they were pleased. I wondered what would happen if Jon was to take over.

"Babe go upstairs, I will join you later." Danger said to April and then kissed her.

Lewis started making sounds well you know how he is at times. She greeted us and went upstairs.

"Kiara you can go join April. I will manage here" I said.

She smiled. "Will you be ok. Gareth if you have a difficult time call me. I will come" She said following April upstairs.

Danger sat down. "So what is it that you guys are gathered in my house. I really need some time alone with April but here you're?"

"Jon's house". Max said.

Danger shrugged. "Whatever, do you see Jon here? "

Lewis offered him some whiskey. "No I'm good"

We all gave him the look but he had truly denied it.

Danger denying alcohol, that's a first.

I cleared my throat "Well....ahem...umm".

Max looked at me." What is it that you wanted to talk to us about?"

"Years ago I was involved in an accident before I even met you guys.Due to that accident Mr Johns found out that Im not actually his biological son,you all know about that.He raped me saying I was paying for my mother's sins.I ran away from home that's when I met you guys.I couldn't tell you because I thought you would treat me differently and I had just bottle it up.". I sighed looking at them.They were all dead quiet.I continued.

" So a few days back I came clean to Kiara and she noticed something about me.We went to se Doctor Gomez and she diagnosed me with Obsessive Compulsive Disorder and I'm on stage two.My obsessions are showering constantly and wearing white clothes.My compulsions are constantly checking if the door is locked and if the lights are turned off."

Lewis sighed."I'm not even gonna get angry at you from keeping this a secret because it destroyed your self esteem but that man deserves to rot in jail,for what he did to you.You should press charges"

I sighed."It happened 14 years ago I don't have any evidence "

Max sighed "But something has to be done.Whatever you decide we are there to help.I can't believe that man did that to you but he acts so righteous in front of people just to protect his political image,who does that."

Danger was just chilled but he looked so lost in his thoughts very lost.

He looked at me and sighed." I feel pity for you man but hey Jon has been through thrice what you went through its easy to walk out of this one alive but I don't think if Jon knows what happened to him he will survive.But Gareth you will pull through. Umm you guys I have to go to

my woman up there and give her good muffs. See yaah and please lock the door on your way out."

He walked upstairs leaving us jawdropped.

Max shook his head "He is turning into a softie I mean he even tried to sympathize with you. That's a first. April is doing wonders".

Lewis came and held my hand trying to reassure me but what happened shocked me. I had rushes that instant where he touched me and it was itchy

"Shiit what's going on with me".

" You're coming out with heat rush now. When did you start having skin allergy?" Max asked.

"I never had skin allergy before and I was completely fine when I came here but when you Lewis..when you---" I sat down and rubbed my head.

"Your skin defense mechanism is going wrong Gareth.You're reacting to skin contact with people.". Kiara said standing on the stairs with glassy eyes.

I panicked." W-what are you saying Kiara.I thought I was doing fine,I have been doing my sessions ".

" What do you mean Kiara.What defense mechanism? "Max asked.

She looked at Max. "A victim of OCD doesn't favour skin contact because they believe germs will be passed to them, since they are afraid of dirt. So I think to avoid that Gareth defense mechanism is causing him to have a skin allergy when he makes skin contact. It's his brain trying to trigger that obsession of avoiding skin contact".

She came to me but I moved back. Tears ran down her cheeks. "You're fine Gareth you're ok."

"Don't touch me please don't come close. It will hurt me if I react to you... please don't come close...." I walked back and everyone was just feeling pity for me.

I was hurting very much. How was I going to survive this, how was I going to live without being able to touch anyone.

"Gareth listen to me ..just listen" She tried to come to me but I was moving back.

I ran to my car but she followed.She got into my car as well,I couldn't stop her I knew she can be stubborn. I drove to my house and we were in total silence.

When I arrived I just ran to my shower because I wanted to remove the dirty,I felt dirty.

I scrubbed as much as I could but I couldn't remove the dirt I was feeling.

I broke down.

"I can't remove the dirt nomatter how much I try.Im trying but I still feel dirty".I screamed

Kiara walked in and turned off the shower she passed me my bathrobe.We walked outside of the bathroom and sat on the bed.I was keeping a distance from her.

" So I will never be able to touch anyone without reacting.God why me"I sighed

She tried to touch me but I moved backwards." .Its all in your mind Gareth,this is happening because you think people will pass germs to you,that's why your defense mechanism is acting up causing the reactions. Look we will do this together, I will help you,I will be there for you every

step of the way. Look you even have bruises because of too much scrubbing, you're not dirty at all Gareth, you're not".

I wanted to hug her but I couldn't. "Will I be ok Kiki, just be honest with me. Will I be able to greet, hug and kiss anybody without them feeling disgusted".

She sighed you could see that this was hurting her too. "I'm here for you Gareth. You will be fine ok"

I looked into her eyes and they sparkled. A pull force was pulling me towards her, I wanted to hug her, kiss her and do all sorts but thanks to this new allergy, I couldn't. As crazy as it sounds I was allergic to people. My phone rang.

I was frustrated, guess who called.

"What do you want?" I said as soon as I answered.

"Watch how you talk to me boy" He said with his nasty old voice.

" Or what? What are you going to do to me huh." I said with a firm voice.

He sighed. "I don't have time for your chitchats. Come home tomorrow to meet your future wife".

I laughed. "You gotta be fucking kidding me. What wife. You know what John, if you continue with this shit I'm going to expose your filthy real face to the world. I'm going to expose my real identity then we will see where your political figure stands.. Don't mess with me" I shouted.

"Are you threatening me?" He shouted back.

"No I'm not, I don't make threats I make promises. So try mess with my life once more you will see that I'm no longer 13 but 29. Try me old man".

He breathed heavily. " You see your mother here--"

I knew he was about to use that card on me but I interrupted.

"Cut the crap old man. She married you and opened her legs for you at her own risk. Whatever you do to her it's between you two so don't ever think that you will pull that mom card on me and I will be affected. I no longer care she was never there for me to begin with and I had to pay for what she did so whatever shit you do it's between you two. If you think you were going to threaten me using her. You lost old man". I hung up and breathed heavily. I loved my mom but I just had to lead this old man astray.

Kiara hugged me." Its going to be fine ok.We need to plan on how to expose that so called father of yours without your image being ruined".

"Yes you're right but I will have to talk to mom.She has a lot of explaining to do.Before I expose this filthy man I have to find my father first.My real biological father". I said and she looked at Mr.I knew she wanted to hug me and tell me everything will be alright but couldn't. We both sighed looking at each other.

Comments and Share

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 6

Lewis.

" *Double-trouble".*

After talking to the guys I went to pick Nicki up since April was with Danger and Kiara was with Gareth,well as for Max he was also planning on picking Jenny up.

I called her informing her that I was going to pick her up,she agreed.I had missed her crazy ass.

I reached at the apartment and knocked.

Jenny opened.

"Ohhh Hy Jenny,I'm here for Nicki". I said smiling.

She smiled back." Sure come on in.She is in her room fast asleep."

I thanked her and went to her room.

She was sleeping but appeared as if she was running, her lower body was on the floor. I laughed, shaking my head.

I carefully laid her on the bed.

I kissed her whole face and she started frowning, then slowly woke up.

"Wakey wakey". I said smiling.

Her eyes were glassy, she started crying. "Babe what did I do?"

I asked shocked.

"Why did you wake me. I was enjoying my sleep. If you really wanted to go with me, you should

have just carried me.I didn't want to wake up" She sobbed.

I sighed and hugged her."I'm sorry,I'm so sorry I woke you.I will make it up to you ok.Now let's go,its already late".

She smiled."You promised to make it up.Don't break your promise"

"I won't break it". I walked to the door but she was still on the bed.

" And now?"I asked.

She spread out her arms and yawned. "I'm still feeling sleepy you know. You ain't romantic at all Lewis".

I shook my head and carried her out. We met Jenny on the way and I informed her that Max was going to pick her up.

Well Nicki was indeed feeling sleepy by the time I reached my car she was snoring lightly. I placed her carefully and drove off. When I reached my house I carried her upstairs.

I informed my chef to cook lots of food because I knew that when Nicki wakes up she would be so hungry.

I went and joined her in bed within minutes I had drifted off. When I woke up the following morning I panicked when I realised she wasn't in bed, I usually wake up before her. I called for her but there was no answer. I ran downstairs already planning to shout at my guards but I breathed in relief when I saw her sitting on the kitchen chairs. She was busy feasting on junkie food.

"I thought there is proper food in here. You're busy stuffing yourself with junkie. Couldn't you tell the chef to cook something for you" I said firmly.

She looked up, shaking her head. "No no not today Satan not when I'm enjoying my food."

She ignored me and continued eating whatever weird sandwiches.

"And what the hell are you eating Nicki. That ain't even healthy". I said looking closely at one of the sandwiches. It had avocados, fried eggs, cheese and polony.

She frowned. "I'm minding my own business, eating to my heart's content, then you wake up with that annoying attitude of yours and disturb my moment. Leave me and my food alone, what's wrong with you!!" She shouted.

I sighed not knowing what to say, she has been so moody and it's not even funny.

"I'm sorry babe, I won't disturb you. I was just wondering how you're swallowing that kind of a sandwich".

She had glassy eyes,I knew water works was about to begin any moment." So you're saying my food is disgusting ".

I rubbed my head." No no I didn't say that.In fact the sandwich looks delicious".

She smiled."Really so come sit down,let's eat together ".

Whaaaat!!!!me eating that disgusting sandwich.I had to come up with a good excuse." I'm on a diet babe".

She frowned."Okay,I wasn't about to give you my sandwich anywhere.Go away,your sight is disturbing ".

I shook my head walking away.Yes she was moody and all but it was kinda cute to me.I sat on the lounge,looking for something to watch but there was nothing interesting. I sighed not knowing what to do next.

Then there was a knock on the door.

I dragged my lazy self and opened.

" I thought I told you not to ever show up here".I frowned.

She rolled her eyes."I thought I told you I'm not about to give up on you.She pushed me aside and catwalked into the lounge.

She sat down cross legged.

Nicki who was wearing my T-shirt walked in,eating yoghurt. I thought she was full because she ate a lot of food but naa.

"Hy Zendaya." She said and sat down putting her legs on the table.

Zen frowned. "Really Lewis ,how can a call girl get so comfortable " .

Nicki just ignored her and continued eating her yoghurt.

" Mind your tone Zen,she is no call girl she is my girl".

Zen laughed. "Are you kidding me.You're calling this your girl.Listen here girly go somewhere like what you did the last time,leave me and my man alone.We need the privacy".

Nicki continued eating, ignoring her.

" Didn't you hear what I said you whore. Get out" she shouted.

Nicki placed her tub down and looked at her. "Bitch please your vagina has been used more than google stop calling me a whore. I ain't one".

I wanted to laugh but this wasn't the moment. "Zendaya Cornell leave my house right now. I'm not in the mood for drama."

I said firmly.

She held my arms."Babe are you doing this to us.To me your Zendaya,for this filthy here.You're choosing her over me".

I pushed her."Stop insulting my woman or we will have problems. Now get out before I do something that I will regret".

Nicki chuckled."Don't worry babe she can say whatever she wants.I googled "who gives a fuck" but my name wasn't on the search results".

She dragged herself to the kitchen. Then came back with those sandwiches.

She sat down and started eating like she never ate before.

Zen looked at her in a disgusted manner because she is a healthy freak.

"Babe let's make this work one more time. My father will not come in our way this time.Please babe". Zen said.

Nicki laughed." You're so desperate, who does that"

Zendaya snapped."Bitch just shut up....shut up will you"..

I interrupted. "Zendaayaa". I said firmly.

Nicki chuckled." No let her say whatever she wants. She must have been conceived through anal sex because there is no way this much of being an asshole can be natural."

Zendaya lost it and threw a cushion at Nicki."Get a life bitch".

I stood between them because I knew shit would go down. Nicki instead of retaliating she quietly went upstairs.

"What the fuck is wrong with you This is my house and you don't come her and disrespect my woman who do you think you're". Yes I was angry but I would never raise my hand against woman. Zen knew that so she stubbornly went and sat down, folding her arms.

" I'm not going anywhere unless we solve this. You're not thinking straight Lewis. We came a long way for us to give up now." She said sobbing.

I was frustrated. "Why can't you understand this Zendaya. I no longer love you, there is nothing left for us to fight for. Leave with the little dignity that you still have".

Instead of replying she wailed,that's when I realised that Nicki had whipped her with one of my belts.I didn't even realize when she came back downstairs. I wanted to stop her but she was too fast.She went and stood in front of Zendaya and started whipping the shit out her.The fact that she was wearing a short dress wasn't even helping. I tried to hold her but she was too powerful for me,I don't even know where she got the power to push me off...it must be those disgusting sandwiches.

The helpers were watching the live show as Nicki whipped the shit out of Zendaya with my belt.

"Why are you standing there.Come help me out". I shouted at them but none of them moved an inch they were afraid of Nicki.

" Move an inch close,I will make you see your ancestors ".She shouted as she gave Zendaya who was screaming her lungs out one last whip.

I managed to hold both her hands after a long struggle." Call me names again,I won't be this nice."She screamed at Zendaya who was crawling away from her.

For a moment I felt pity for year,she had visible belt marks on her thighs and shoulders.

"I'm going to press charges.I'm going to do it" She said with tears and mucus running down her face.

"Go ahead. Jail is my second home,police station is my middle name" Nicki shouted back.

Zendaya started limping. "You will never see your son Lewis.Never,I will never allow it.This ratchet just ruined the chances of you meeting your son".

" Son!!"I was shocked.

"Yes son!!" She shouted and walked out. I was left tongue-tied. So I had a son with Zendaya.

"You can follow her, I'm sure you want to know more about your son". Nicki said sadly.

I held her waist. "I know what you're thinking. I know you're thinking I'm going to choose her because we have a son together. I will always choose you ok. If it is true that we have a son together we will find a way to tackle the problem but there is no way I'm going to take her back because we have a son. There is something called co-parenting. I can co-parent with her but I will never go back to her." I kissed her passionately and she moaned.

I looked at her with a naughty smile. "Babe did you ever had a boyfriend before ".

She frowned. " No,why would I have one".

"Why do people have boyfriends? So you're telling me you never had one".I asked

She nodded. " Yes I never dated anyone before"

I chuckled. "Why though?"

She sighed. "A lot of girls about there get heartbroken because of the dating. What I mean is you will think that you have finally met your knight in shining armour but it will turn out that it was only a fool in aluminium foil" She said looking serious and I laughed my lungs out, like who thinks like that.

"So why did you ask" She looked at me with an eyebrow raised.

I stammered. "Ummm...I...I..ahh...I w-was just w-wondering".

She laughed. " I would love to be your girlfriend Lewis. I know you badly want to be my man".

I smiled."Thanks for being able to read between the lines.You're the best.I wouldn't mind having a Jackie Chan as a girlfriend".

She laughed."I just had to teach her lesson or two babe she was getting in my nerves.I don't even care if she presses charges anyway."

I sighed."I know babe but don't about beating people like that.It scares the shit out of me.I didn't even know where you got the power".

She just laughed.I stared deep in her eyes and she looked at me too but later on shyly looked down.She can be all ratchet but she is shy,how cute.

I laughed and made her sit on my laps.

"I'm not promising to be the perfect guy Nicki.To be honest at some point I might turn out to be a fool in aluminium foil instead of being your knight in shining armor,but im willing to try to be the perfect man for you,to meet all your requirements Nicki.Growing up I always thought everything for me would turn out to be just perfect like how I imagined it,I always thought with Zendaya everything will fall according to plan but life became just a continuous rollercoaster of

pain,tears,bad decisions and pretense. I wore emotions that I never deeply felt,I wore a happy face while deep down I was drowning in pain but the first time I met you that day when you walked into Max's house wearing a short nightdress chewing a bubblegum like there is no tomorrow, I just felt like I have set my eyes on a woman for the first time.We both crazy and we discussed about our future wedding the first day we meet but all the plans we discussed that day might go according to plan with God's grace.We are both broken Nicki but maybe our past was meant to be so damn broken so that when we meet we could align perfectly.I love you,I won't lie.I can't keep on suppressing it because I'm broken.You should know that I love and I will cherish you like you should be cherished.Its not going to be an easy road for us there will be whirlwind,tornadoes, hurricanes,storms you name it but I want to fight all with you.I know you're strong woman, they tried to break you but still here you're, that's the kind of woman I want.I want you to never give up on us,no matter what".

When I finished talking she was crying. I shushed her and wiped her tears off.

"I love you Nicki and I know it will take time for you to say the same to me but I'm a very patient man.Now stop crying my big baby".

She smiled with tears rolling down." I'm horny babe".

I laughed carrying her upstairs.

Max.

"Why didn't you come *clean".*

Life has been splendid for me and my kids. They have already started schooling. I made sure they went to one of the most expensive private school in Georgia. I wanted to have them homeschooled but after discussing it with Jenny we thought it was wiser for them socialize with the other kids. Jenny has been visiting them each and everyday so all in all everything has been

well.

Talking about Jenny, I called her that moment. She answered on the first ring. "Max's girlfriend for rent speaking ..how can I help you"

She loves answering her phone that way lately. Well on that note I hadn't informed my family about the truth because it will break them. So I decided to keep things the way they are until further notice.

"My one and only girlfriend. I'm on my way to your house. Please wear something semi formal we are going to have a family lunch." I said.

She sighed. I knew it was hard for her to continue pretending. "Ok fine let me get ready".

She hung up.

I bought some flowers and dark chocolates for her.

When I arrived at their apartment Kiara opened for me and then called Jenny. She came wearing a grey skinny jean which was ripped on one knee, a navy long sleeve T-shirt, a short sleeve navy coat and matching heels. Her hair was bunched up in a messy bun. She was looking good no lie and we kinda matched because I was wearing a grey suit.

"Hey you looking good". I said kissing her forehead and giving the flowers as well as the chocolates.

"Dark chocolates. You're sure are the best boyfriend for rent ever." She beamed in excitement.

"Thank you, well. let's go and pick the kids up before its late." I said holding her waist.

"Ncooo you guys are just sweet,why don't you become a real couple already". Kiara said taking pictures of us.

Jenny rolled her eyes in a dramatic way." Naa he is an oldie and I don't do old guys".

That kinda hurt though but I had to pretend lie it didn't hit home.I mean we are 11 years apart,so yea I'm kinda old for her to date me.

"Ohhh so you're saying I'm an old guy now.I don't even have one grey hair."I defended

We argued on our way to the twin's school till I gave up. I was never going to win against her.She even named me granny-boyfriend.

Anyway we picked the kids and they were so excited to meet their granny my mom after all she spoil them with whatever they want. We passed by my house and they changed into their clothes. It was an exciting journey all the way to my family's house. Joyce and Justin were telling us everything they did at school.

" Justin kissed a girl daddy" Joyce said.

Jenny's eyes popped out. "You did what Justin...ohh you're so grounded ".

Justin defended. " It was just a perk on the cheek ok, just a courtesy kiss". Trust the boy to be intelligent.

"Leave my son alone,he is just a gentleman like dad.Right my boy". We fist bumped.

" And Joyce has a boyfriend ".Justin said.

" No I don't ".She protested.

" My princess you're going to have a boyfriend when you turn 40 okay for now focus on school".I said firmly.

Jenny rolled her eyes. "But its ok for Justin to kiss girls now"

Joyce was excited. "So if Justin is allowed to give girls courtesy kisses I will have a boyfriend when I turn 12".

We argued all the way but it was fun though. Joyce swore to have a boyfriend at 12 and no one was going to change her mind.

We arrived, I held Jenny's waist while holding Joyce's hand and Jenny was holding Justin's hand.

" Is there something we are missing here". Joyce said with an eyebrow raised. She is a little diva that one.

"No there is nothing you're missing" I said holding a laugh.

"So why are you holding sister Jenny's waist."She asked.

" Because she might fall".Jenny laughed.

"I might fall too,why don't you hold my waist?" She asked.

I didn't have a comeback for that.

Luckily Justin came to my rescue. "You ask too much questions. Its adult stuff,let's go see granny".

They ran inside, Jenny and I laughed.

" She can be too much sometimes ".Jenny said shaking her head.

We went inside the house and I frowned when I saw Uncle Ken, Ken Jnr and Eve. Why couldn't they just at least have their own lunch at their own house.

Mom came and hugged me, then kissed Jenny.

" How is my beautiful daughter in law doing?" She said smiling.

"I'm doing just fine Mrs Jackson". She said shyly.

" Ohhh please call me mom" She said taking her away from me.

I pouted. "You're being unfair mom, you love her too much".

She just laughed walking away while holding the nervous Jenny. I knew she was never because I realised she had her fingers crossed.

I greeted everyone but dad wasn't around.

"Where is dad?" I asked.

"Ohhh he is upstairs in his study with Mr Cornell." Mom said.

We waited for dad while mom was chatting with Jenny. Justin and Joyce had disappeared upstairs, I guess they were playing with the other kids. My family's house is literally a crèche because mom takes all the Jackson kids on weekends, holidays or for lunch, she loves kids.

After a while dad came back with Mr Cornell they are good business partners even though what happened between Lewis and Zen affected but relationship a little, but I just don't like Mr Cornell I never liked him though he is shady.

I saw Jenny shifting uncomfortably, when Mr Cornell glanced at her. I already felt like punching that stupid face of his, he better not be eyeing my girl.

We sat on the dining table and mommy had Jenny on her side,I wanted to sit besides her but Ken Jnr beat me to it,I cussed.

We started eating and chatting. Mr Cornell would constantly check on Jenny and that would make her uncomfortable.

"S what's your name young lady" He asked.

"Her name is Jenny Jordan" I answered with a serious look on.

"I thought she can answer herself,she has a mouth right". He said.

" She is my girlfriend so whatever you want to know ask me" I said firmly emphasising the girlfriend part.

He kept quiet and the lunch continued. After we were done Jenny offered to help the maids to take the plates to the kitchen. I knew it was a way of getting away from the glances Mr Cornell was throwing at her.

We went to the lounge and started chatting just general stuff. Eve was even in her best behavior I don't know who she was trying to impress.

We heard some noise from the kitchen and we all went there. It was Mr Cornell holding his cheek while Jenny was breathing fire.

"How dare you touch me with your filthy hands". She shouted. Within a blink I was holding the old man by his collar punching him. My dad held me.

" Hey what's wrong with you Max Mr Cornell its older than you". He said

"I don't care he has no right to touch my girl". I shouted.

He wiped his face." I didn't touch er,I was just asking her if she is still striping? "He said.

" Still what?"My dad asked.

"She used to be a striper,so I was just asking if she is still one then she slapped me". He said.

Jenny gave him an angry look." What about the part where you smacked my ass".

He chuckled. "You used to get paid for sleeping with man old enough to be your ancestors so what's surprising".

Everyone gasped. Eve laughed clapping her hands. "I think we need to go, to the lounge for this".

Everyone walked back to the lounge and I held Jenny's hand, I knew she was about to breakdown.

"Is it true Jenny were you a striper" Dad asked.

"Yes its true. I was a striper" She said bluntly.

Uncle Ken laughed "What is this family coming too Now we are going to have stripers for a daughter in law.Wonders shall never end".

I was angry at Jenny for not telling me this.No I wasn't judging her but she should have told me this but I wasn't going to give these idiots that impression.

" Max did you know about this."Mom was quiet for a while asked

"Yes I knew about it". I lied.

Eve chuckled." So you're going to marry a whore for a wife are you that desperate Max.Can't you see clearly that she is a damn gold digger and very cunning first of all she managed to make a place for her siblings in this family and now she bitched her way into your life but you're too foolish to see what this whore is up to".

Mom gave Eve a slap that had Mike Tyson genes in it. I didn't even know she could slap someone like that because she is sooo soft. "Don't ever interfere with issues that doesn't concern you, you here. Stay in your lane and mind your language this is not your house".

Dad was agitated. "So you slapped my niece for this whore here".

Mom was agitated too. "And I will do it again if I have to you hear. She is so disrespectful and ill mannered. Who does she think she is calling my Jenny names huh."

"I don't want to see this whore in my house. I'm not going to have a stripper for a daughter in law. Get this bitch out of my house" Dad shouted.

I clenched my jaws. "Call her bitch one more time, I will forget that you're my father. You're all ready to crucify her for something she used to do and knowing my girl I know very well she didn't do it for the pleasure of it but because she had to make the ends meet, she had to do anything and everything to put food on the table for her siblings. You're just too blind to notice how a great and strong woman she is, she sacrificed to put her dignity on the line just for the people she loves but all of you you're just so judgemental as if your lives are perfect. Even you're saying my girl is a whore right but what are you, if you can master the courage of coming to my house throwing yourself at me and swearing to destroy your marriage what name can I give you. And you Mr Cornell as old as you are you run after k girls who are younger than your daughter and go to strip clubs but you're married. Uncle Ken and Ken Jnr I don't even wanna expose your dirty laundry because it's disgusting. Well as for you decide you no longer man decisions in my life I'm 32 not 12. Jenny is the one that I want in my life. You're not going to decide who I will be with you guys don't suck my dick and definitely do not warm my bed at night so as for who will be my life partner it's up to me to decide if you can't accept Jenny then I will also cease to exist in your lives. Mom please my kids we have to leave"

Everyone went dead quiet. She didn't protest she took Joyce and Justin to the car.

She came back and wiped tears off Jenny's face. She kissed her forehead. "I'm not going to hold your past against you You will be my daughter in law. You guys you have my blessings"

We walked out and the drive home we were in total silence. When we arrived I asked the kids to go to their rooms they obliged without questioning because they might have sensed the tension.

I looked at Jenny and she gave me the look too she was also angry."Why didn't you tell me this Jenny.Why did you hide this from me huhWhy didn't you come clean about this.".I shouted.

She shouted back." What did you want me to tell you.Ohhh I should have told you that a fifty plus old man robbed me my innocence, I should have told you that I showed my body to the world so that I can get money to take care of my siblings. You wanted me to tell you that I fucked and sucked more than 15 dicks a day huh.You wanted me to tell you that I worked at the same club that you own huh,you wanted me to tell you that I once hated you for owning that club because that's where my life was destroyed. I had to do drugs and I was diagnosed of schizophrenia, you wanted me to tell you all that".She was crying.

I hugged her tightly. "You should have just told me babe I was not going to judge you.I was not going to judge you or look at you differently Jenny".

End of chapter2 6

Sorry for typing errors.

Comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 6

April.

"We found love in a *hopeless place"*

2 weeks later

The past days have been blissful and splendid. Danger and I have been so all over each other lately. The other day that slept i over to his house he was Mr Romantic despite having a cold look that could scare anyone away.I know what you're thinking y'all,we didn't make love he just muffed me and I had to return the favour by blowing him.After all the atmosphere was romantic, there were red roses,wine and stuff but he said I wasn't ready and he wanted to take this slow until I was ready for him.So far so good my life was perfect. Jenny on the other hand informed us that Max's family found out she was a stripper and only Max as well as his mother were on

Jenny's side. Well as for Gareth, Kiara informed us that his condition is getting worse by the day, he doesn't even want anyone near him since he started reacting to skin contact, this has been worrying Kiara so much that she can just zone out.

"Morning Jenny". I said as I entered the kitchen. Jenny was busy making breakfast, she was in a good mood lately.

"Hey hey how was your night". She said concentrating on her pots.

"It was amazing, I slept like a baby. Have you seen Nicki around" I whispered.

Well Nicki has been a living nightmare I tell you. She is always moody and we always tiptoe around the house because one mistake anything can be thrown your way. If you yawn too much she can get irritated, if you laugh too much she gets easily annoyed. For the past days I have managed to duck four plates, two cups and a tea pot. We honestly don't know what's going on with her. If Lewis annoys her then we are the ones who suffer the consequences.

Jenny looked around. "She is still fast asleep. I just wanna have my breakfast, eat and leave as soon as possible."

I whispered. "Same applies."

Luckily for Kiara she wasn't around. In as much as Gareth doesn't want anyone around him, Kiki is not the one to give up on him anytime soon. She has been sleeping over to his house and practically taking care of him even though he keeps a very good distance between them. We even see less of her around the house.

Anyway I checked my phone one more time, there was no Good morning Appie text from Danger. I was frustrated. I wanted to call him but I just decided against it, you know sometimes a person need a breather.

I looked at Jenny "so how has been mom in law and Max". I asked.

She smiled." Ohh you know her as always she is perfect.She is an angel".

"So was Lucifer". A voice startled both of us.We were trying so hard to get out of the house as soon as possible but it was a complete failure this time.Nicki was awake.

" Good morning Nicki".Jenny said.

She frowned and sat down."What's so good about this morning "

She started wailing holding her phone I guess Lewis had not called yet.

" What's wrong Nicki?"I asked maintaining a distance.

She started sobbing. "When I'm looking at myself on the mirror,I look so fine as fuck...but when I take a selfie I look like an egg."

Jenny started laughing. I tried to suppress my laughter but it wasn't working.

"Let's see your pictures"

I managed to say.

She gave me her phone and indeed she looked funny.Her nose looked like it was swollen and her face was oily.

"They are not that bad" Jenny said laughing.

She wailed even more."I know they are ugly,I look like an egg.Let me just call Lewis you guys are not even helping ".

She took her phone and walked to the lounge dialing Lewis's number.

Jenny and I laughed.

" So how is Max ?"I asked.

She blushed."Ohhh he is fine."

I chuckled."He is your boyfriend now"

She chuckled."Yea he is,he has always been"

I was shocked. "You serious, you were dating Max all along?"

She laughed. "There is a difference between boyfriend and boy friend...I meant the latter"

I rolled eyes. "What difference. Its sounds the same to me and mean the same."

She sighed. "The difference between boyfriend and boy friend is that little space we call a friend zone on "boy---friend" ...you get it. So Max is my boy friend"

I just laughed. "For how long are you going to deny what you feel for the guy and I see the way he looks at you. He wants you, even went as far as suing the person who he had sold the club to just for you. Why are you denying what's there between you two".

She sighed. "It's complicated April. Max is matured he wants a mature lady and me on the other hand I'm just like a girl. I'm afraid that I won't meet his expectations April. I might act childish and mess up the whole thing after all I never had a boyfriend before, I don't know how to act when I'm in a relationship with someone. What if I become one of those insecure, nagging girlfriends and he will get tired and leave me eventually. Yes I feel something for him but I'm so afraid April, it's scary. I had a dirty past and Max on the other hand he is clean and worse the media always post everything about his life, if I get involved with him, it will taint his image. He deserves better not someone with a lot of baggage like me".

I sighed. "Don't deny yourself some happiness because you're worried about how people might think. Max had the courage to stand with you against his own family, so you think he can't stand up for you against those low life journalists. I know you're worried about the not having a boyfriend before issue but Jenny, even I didn't have a boyfriend but Jon and I are figuring everything out together. Don't deny yourself happiness because I know very well that he makes you happy".

She just looked down and I knew she was having serious thoughts.

I checked my phone again and still nothing from Jon. Now I was getting worried. I tried his number and it just sent me straight to voicemail.

The doorbell rang. I rushed to it but was disappointed when I realised it was Lewis.

"Expecting someone." He had noticed that I sulked.

I managed to smile. "I thought it was Jon anyway come on in."

I paved way for him and he walked in. As soon as he walked in Nicki started wailing again.

"Babe I look like an egg, see..my selfies are so ugly" She said showing Lewis the pictures.

Lewis just smiled and kissed her forehead. "You're beautiful my girl. There must be something wrong with the camera. Now let's go and get you some velvet cake".

She smiled and they walked out.

I couldn't help but smile they looked so cute together, way too cute.

I joined Jenny for breakfast and we ate in silence. I knew she was thinking about what I told her.

I went and showered afterwards. I wanted to go to Jon's house but decided against it. Yes I was still working there.

While I was dressing my phone rang, I thought it was Jon but was disappointed when I realized it was Lewis.

I rolled my eyes and answered." Yes what is it".

"Nicki collapsed. I'm taking her to John's private hospital". He was panicking, I could tell.

"Ok I'm on my way there."

I quickly tied my hair and informed Jenny. We called Mr Cedric I informing him that we were not showing up for work and he understood, what choice did he have anyway. The taxi took us to the hospital. We ran like maniacs to where Lewis was. Only when we arrived is when I realized I didn't have my shoes on.

Max was already there and when he saw Jenny he just froze looking at her. I secretly laughed. These two though.

I ran to Lewis. "What happened? "

He messed his hair. "We were just going in to buy some cake for her when she just fainted, luckily I was holding her waist so she didn't fell down. They are with her right now, I wonder what's taking them so along. I'm beginning to worry".

I rubbed his back. "Don't worry she is fine. I'm sure she is just dehydrated or something".

After a while the doctor came and we all circled him.

"How is she doctor, what's wrong with her?" Lewis was the first on to ask.

"Ohhh don't worry we managed to stabilize her blood pressure,it was good for someone in her condition". The doctor said.

" What condition? "I asked.

" You were not aware, she is three weeks pregnant. Congratulations."He said.

We all looked at Lewis who had his mouth open."She ..she is pregnant.. I'm going to be a father...are you sure doctor."

I smacked the back of his head. "You fuckrd without a condom, what did you expect, a plasma TV?"

Everyone laughed.

"You can go see her but don't suffocate her. I think the father should go first" The doctor said and walked away.

Everyone was happy but I couldn't help but notice some sort of sadness Max's eyes. I brushed it off because I have a tendency of reading too much into things.

We all went in to see her at once, they was no way we were going to suffocate her anyway. She was still fast asleep.

Lewis was kissing her hands, face and tummy he was really ecstatic but I can't say the same for Nicki you never know. Now that explains the mood swings and weird cravings she had. And it clicked that she forgot to take the contraceptives. I walked out and informed Kiara that she was going to be an aunt. It wasn't an easy task because Kiara cannot have a baby so I didn't know how to tell her without having to appear like I was rubbing it on her face. I did my best to inform her and it turned out well she was excited, way too excited to become an aunt. I tried Jon's phone but I couldn't go through. I gave IP and went back into the room. Nicki was wide awake now busy wailing.

"I'm going to have a big nose, toes and fingers which looks like sausages... Ohhh my god I'm going to look like a whale. Its all your fault Lewis. Its all your fault" She cried.

We walked out leaving Lewis with the task of shushing Nicki down.

Jenny and Max were all over each her and now I was the third wheel.

" I had being the third wheel bit I love you too guys".I hugged them while they were hugging each other They laughed and I walked off.It was already 1pm and Jon never called I was getting super worried.

Beiley called me and we decided to meet.

We met at Itaiaand he was wearing a hoodie as always.I sat down and acted ikeiwas acted lie I was talking to someone casually, I didn't want to raise suspicions after all Beiley was well known.

"Wassup so what did you find". I said siping on my juice.

He smiled."It is confirmed he is a businessman with two companies,two hospitals and supermarkets, but it's only a front he is actually a drug lord and he is into illegal gun smuggling. There is history that he was into human trafficking before.I overhead mom and dad talking about it but unfortunately I couldn't catch the name." He said.

"Thanks so much Beiley,this means so much to me.I will use this information to find who he really is". I said

"Its ok,if I find anything I will inform you.One more thing he has people following you.Its confirmed. Look over there,there are people wearing all black looking like ordinary people, but if you look closely they have earpieces.There are your shadow guards,they literally live in the shadows".

I looked around and they were there.I spotted five of them.

" Thanks Beiley for informing me.Thanks for everything ".I said.

He squeezed my hand." Don't stress it.I will leave now ".

He walked out.I decided to work a little with the other helpers.Now this thing of having shadow guards wasn't sitting well with me.So it meant that the so called dad of mine knew each and every move I made,that's why I was just going around in circles and not being able to find him.Now I had to find out what deals Julian made with the McClains.If I get the information and all the people that were involved ,I might be able to find who my father is.

Around 5:45pm I decided to go back to home.I was annoyed because I hadn't spoken to Jon all day.I arrive home and went straight.When I opened my room there were rose petals on the floor and dress on the bed it was a cobwebby knit creating and was off shoulder black in colour and black heels.There was a red lingerie on the bed and a note.

" Wear this tonight,I'm *picking you up at* *7....Yours truly Danger"*

THIS INSERT HAS *STRONG SEXUAL* *SCENES READERS* *DISCRETION IS ADVISED!*

I giggled,the way this man loves black.I took a long shower and shaved all the prominent areas.Well I was going to get some today,that's for sure.

After I was done I used my strawberry lotion well my man loves it.I combed my hair and decided to let it fall.When I wore the dress it clung lovely and seductively to every curve of my body and it was very provocative. I smiled at myself,he was not going to be able to take his eyes off me.I took a picture and sent it to my girls, they commented saying I was looking sexy.At exactly seven Danger called saying he was in the lounge. I walked slowly to the lounge when he saw me he opened his mouth and murmured "shit".

He walked over and gave me a passionate kiss.

" Damn baby you look wow" He said biting his lower lip.

"You're not looking bad yourself". He was wearing a suit,black in colour as usual.

" Let's get out of this place...this dress makes me what to...let's just go".

He led me to a Porsche and we drove off.

When we arrived at his house he led me to the backyard.

I cried looking at the whole setup."Babe this is beautiful ".

They were rose petals on the lawn,garden chandeliers-like lights,in the middle there was two chairs and a table beautifully decorated. On the other side they were five men playing the canon tune on violins slowly.

" Do you like it" He asked smiling, which was a first in a long time

"No I don't like it...I love it..this beautiful" I hugged him.

"For a moment I thought you were going to say you hate it,it took me.the whole day to pull this off." He said leading me to the chairs.

"Thank you so much". I said

" You deserve it you're special Appie" He smirked.

I understood one thing about him,he is not a man of many words,a smirk,biting his lower lip is enough to make you understand that you're special to him.

We ate in comfortable silence.After we were done eating that's when he dismissed the guys who were playing the violins.

"Another surprise?" I asked.

He smirked".Well yea another desert".

The backyard was big enough. There was the other side which was decorated in a picnic like venue.With black and red fluffy fleeces,red dim lights and roses too.

He smirked. "I once asked you your sexual fantasy and you said to me you wanted to make love under the stars.So I gueses your wish is getting fulfilled today".

I smiled." Ohhh my God I never thought you would take that seriously ".

He chuckled." I take everything seriously my dangerous woman."

He knelt and removed my heels.

He removed his shoes and jacket and we sat down watching the stars.

"Appie I now believe in fate.You know it makes you meet important people in unexpected situations.I almost ran you over when I first saw you.I never imagined that you would be this important in my life.You're special Appie you're the only sane thing that has ever happened to me.You're special very special."

I was getting emotional,I hugged him and we kissed.

"I want to tell you something" He said.

"That can wait" I kissed him like my life depended on it.Within a blink the beautiful dress was in two pieces.He removed my bra and used his teeth to remove the thing,that was sexy and so turning on.I unbuttoned his shirt, touching each and every muscle.

He removed his briefs and looked at me.

"Wow...t-this is big and beautiful.." I stammered looking at his shaft.How on earth was I going to take all that in.I swallowed hard.

He caressed his mouth over my neck."I will show you what's beautiful ".

So this is it,I was going to be a woman.I was on an injection well the girls influenced it and Jon had once convinced me to go for a checkup with him and we were both squeaky clean.

His hands slid from my arms and caressed my breast.He kissed one nipple slowly and tenderly.

" This is beautiful.... And this..."

He said with a husky voice.

"Mmh.." My voice failed me.

All the breath in my lungs wheezed out as he slid his fingers down on my clit gently probing it.

He then kissed it and slid his tongue in. I was now only conscious of one thing and that is the need to complete my magical cycle had began. I held tightly on to the sheets as he did wonders with his tongue. I vibrated as I had my first orgasm. He licked me clean and kissed me as I tasted my salts.

Slowly he entered me. Yes it was hard because I was still sealed but it was worth the pain. I bit my lower lip as I felt the universe turn full circle around us. We fitted together so well, its like we have been made for each other. My body was responding very well with every movement of his. With every thrust, every caressing, I hold tightly on him as he looked deep into my eyes with his icy grey eyes. His eyes were glassy and he shed a tear of emotion. I also felt my eyes burning with emotional tears. It wasn't only the intensity and sensation of Damger's body that was driving mine to the edge. I was strongly sure that this was my destiny..our destiny..just me and Danger.

"I love you Appie". He said shooting his load. My heart leaped as I heard him saying that, he had just confessed his love to me.

" I love you too Danger." I whispered.

We both looked on the stars while catching our breaths.

Almost the whole night we were making love our crys of pleasure made the most beautiful

music piece I have ever heard. After a long time we both drifted to sleep.

When I woke up the sun was blazing on our skins.

I looked at him he looked peaceful. I kissed him all the face. He opened his eyes they were sea-green. How does someone's eye color change so much.

"Wakey wakey". I smiled.

He covered his body so fast looking so shocked. "I'm sorry I didn't mean to run you over the other day".

I looked at him with confusion. "We are over that babe."

He smiled nervously and looked away. I prayed it to be not what I was thinking. "Ummm Danger what is my sexual fantasy".

He smiled." Umm obviously having sex on a bed with roses and champagne on the side. "

I stood up immediately and wore his shirt since my dress was ripped.

"I will see you some other time."

I said with tears in my eyes.

I ran to the taxi rank with only hi shirt,no undergarments and no shies.I even ignored the pain I was feeling between my legs.I went straight to the apartment.

The girls tried to question me but I wasn't in the mood.I just wore some panties.Lewis was around so I just took his car keys without asking. I drove like a maniac to the mental asylum.It was around 8 within fifteen minutes I had arrived at the asylum. I ran inside straight to Doctor Gomez's office.I went in without knocking.

"Hey April,its such a surprise to she you" She said looking at me weirdly. I understood I was wearing a man's shirt only.

"Doctor Gomez I don't have time.I need you to tell me more about the person with DID.What's the name and how long did they have the condition?"

She sighed "You know the information is confidential".

I cried." Please doctor this is important, this is a matter of life and death.I wouldn't have been asking you to risk your job if it wasn't important.Please doctor".

She just sighed and gave me a file."I can see how much this is so important to you but please don't disclose anything, I will loose my job".

I took the files with shaking hands and opened. I fell on my knees and screamed.

"Are you ok?" She asked looking concerned.

I didn't have the power to answer her. I just ran out to wherever my legs could take me. When my feet were feeling numb I felt down.

How couldn't I open my eyes. Everything was right in front of my eyes. For someone who spent five years in a mental asylum I was so stupid. The signs were there but I chose to ignore them. He has different eye colors but I couldn't get one and one to get two. He seemed to forget things but still I didn't notice.

Jon McClain has DID.

I screamed. I felt strong hands holding me. It was a man in black. The shadow guard. He led me to Lewis's car and drove to my apartment in total silence. He gave me the keys as we walked out. I just dragged my weak feet to the door and opened. The girls were already on my case but I went and locked myself in my room. I cried.

"God so what am I in love with?...An alter ego and alter personality".

I had realized that this whole Danger thing was just an alter personality. It's not hard to notice one

So many questions ran through my mind but I didn't have answers.

End of chapter2 6

I really wanted to write a longer chapter but my phone's battery is about to die. Apologies I will make it up to you.

Sorry for the typing error. Once again let's comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

There was a mistake on the previous chapter it was supposed to be 27 but I wrote 26. So this is Chapter 2 8

April.

"Broken in a million *ways".*

I looked at my room, it was up, side, down. All the flower vases were broken, my clothes were everywhere. I looked at my hands they were bruised, my legs had broken glass pieces on them and they were bleeding but still the pain wasn't compared to what I was feeling inside. My girls were shouting, screaming and begging for me to open the door but their voices would just disappear into thin air. They couldn't open the door because the bed was on it. I sat down as I screamed and cried.

"April what's wrong please open up girl....please open let's talk about this" Jenny shouted banging the door.

I didn't have the power to answer her I just kept sniffing because I didn't have tears left to cry.

"Let me try and break down the door". I heard Lewis saying. He tried but failed there was no way he was going to be able to break it down anyway.

" Appie please open up let's talk about this."Nicki shouted.When she called me that I broke even more.Appie... he was only one who called me that.An alter personality.

I laughed at myself,like really laughed,how could I fall in love with an alter,a thing that would anytime cease to exist.Its like falling in love with a ghosts.

I punched the mirror and it broke hurting me in process. The girls screamed but still I didn't open the door.

I went and sat down since I was feeling weak.Fun enough I passed out on the floor.

I opened my eyes when I felt someone carrying me.When I opened my eyes I was on a stretcher,taking me to an ambulance.

I weakly opened my eyes and Kiara was crying.

They took me in and started attending to me.We arrived at the hospital and they rushed me in.

They sedated me so I passed out.When I woke up I heard voices.

"We have to inform Danger about this". That was Lewis's voice.

" You're talking about Danger...Joss has taken over.He is at an exhibition looking like Pharell Williams ".Max sad.

"So what are we going to tell her if she wakes up,she obviously expects to see Danger around.What are we going to say" Lewis said.

"Will figure that out.But what happened to her,why did she hurt herself like that" Max asked.

"I don't know either"Lewis said.

I heard the door closing and slowly opened my eyes.I was alone.My hands and feet were bandaged.I sighed.

After a while my girls walked in.I knew that the hospital room was going to turn into an

interrogation room.

" Why did you do it.Why did you try to end your life April.How could you've so selfish didn't you think about us at all."Kiara said crying.

I sighed."I didn't try to end my life.I just punched the glass so maybe I lost some blood and passed out".

"What happened,why were you so angry?" Kiara asked.

"I was just angry.I found out information about my father.He is a criminal and I just couldn't take it anymore. Like I'm the daughter of a criminal." I sighed looking defeated.I had to put on a convincing facial expression.There was no way I could tell themthat I was madly in love with a

alter personality and on top of that he deflowered. Also I'm not even sure if the owner of the body loves me.

Nicki raised an eyebrow. "I feel like you're lying but ok. All I can say is, this is definitely not your year" She continued eating her ice cream.

"You will get through this but just know that resentment is like poisoning your own food and expect it to kill your enemy". Jenny said.

I sighed and looked away if only they knew.

After a while an old doctor came in checking me up, I wasn't going to be admitted anyway. She introduced herself as Margaret.

She was doing her thing while I was bored as fuck. I mean there was no need for all those crosschecking I was fine.

Nicki breathed heavily. "I'm so tired."

The doctor looked at her and shook her head. "Youngsters these days you don't exercise, you don't eat well. Look at you you're too young to be tired."

Nicki rolled her eyes. "Okay Margaret you're too old to be alive but here we are".

The doctor's jaws dropped.

"Whaat don't look at me like that I'm also good at dishing facts. Now I'm damn hungry you're going to say you're too fat to be hungry".

She walked out dragging her pregnant ass. The doctor was still shocked. Jenny was suppressing a laughter. I wanted to laugh to but this wasn't the moment.

"It's the hormones" Kiara explained.

She smiled." I understand. Anyway can you please leave us I need to have a word with Miss April".

They obliged and walked out.

"When am I getting discharged, I'm not seriously injured" I said sitting up straight.

"Well we will have to keep you under suicide watch.Maybe we can find someone you can talk to and explain why you wanted to end your life" She said.

I was frustrated. "Who said I wanted to end my life".

" How can you explain the wrist injuries".She said giving me an attitude and for an old lady it kinda pissed me off.

"Well don't make assumptions when you do not know the whole story.I just punched the mirror ok and broke some vessels that explains the cuts.I did not try to end my life ok".I shouted.

" If you're not suicidal then you got real anger issues.You need to see a shrink"She said.

I threw a pillow down."What's wrong with you.I have always seen a shrink for five good years when nothing was wrong with me.Just because I had a blow doesn't mean I have anger issues.The person who needs a psychiatrist here is you because seriously you should retire from this job."

She walked out without saying anything. Well if they were not going to discharge me I was going to discharge myself. I jumped off the bed and took off the drip. Yes the wounds were hurting now but not of this mattered. What I was feeling was a hundred fold than the physical pain.

While I was tying my hair. Lewis and Jon walked in or should I say Lewis and Jon's alter personality walked in.

Fun enough the alter was dressed in black, unfortunately his eye color sold him away. I sighed, so they were planning to make me a complete fool.

"H-hey babe". He stammered. He nervously came gave me a baby kiss on the cheek.

I cupped his face and missed the daylights out of him. At first our teeth gnashed and later he finally got the hang of it. I wiped his mouth and he touched his lips like someone who just got their first kiss.

" This one must be a virgin". I secretly laughed at my own thoughts.

"Umm I will leave you two. Danger be good ok" Lewis said walking out. I wanted to laugh my lungs out but I controlled myself. This one was know where close to what Danger is like. This alter I was facing right here was smiling from East to West of which when it comes to Danger he just smirks. Maybe this acting thing was going to work if he had taken Jon's role because no one can be like Danger.

Anyway if they wanted to act like this I wanted to see how long they can keep up after all two can play the game.

"April what happened?" He asked. I frowned, I missed being called Appie and here was calling me April.

"Nothing serious. I was just angry. Let's just go home."

I wrapped my hands around his necks and he cleared his throat.

"How about we go home and finish off what we started yesterday. I'm feeling sore down there and I need to be cooled down".

I said with a raised eyebrow. He choked on his saliva and started coughing.

" Well ummm babe. I think you need to rest first and heal. You're injured after all".

He said avoiding eye contact.

"Ok fine but I will sleep over at your place because after the stunt I pulled,my girls will think that we are in bad terms." I said.I was just curious, I wanted to know how he acts after all I knew how Danger and Jon acts but was foolish enough to ignore it.

"Umm ok". He couldn't say no after all he wanted to act like my man so let the fun begin.

We walked out of the hospital and he was walking a little faster than me,that's how nervous he was.

We went into the car and he started playing feels by Pharell Williams, Katy Perry and Big Sean.He started singing along smiling nodding his head,he was really having the time of his life.While me on the other hand just sulked not knowing what to do with my already messed up life.I missed Danger already but I was angry and hurt.He could have at least told me the truth.

" Maybe he tried ".My conscience whispered. That's when it clicked that the other day in the car he wanted to tell me something and the previous day he wanted to tell me something but I stopped.Is that he wants to disclose this.

I sighed again feeling defeated by this whole thing.It was written clearly in his file that Danger and Joss are alter egos/personalities and unfortunately I had fallen deeply for one which is Danger.Now the problem was Jon had hots for Ruth how was I going to survive seeing him with her because it would be just like seeing my Danger with Ruth.

" We have arrived.."His jolly voice startled me.

I managed to smile as I walked out of the car.

"Be careful, you don't wanna hurt yourself even more, In fact let me give you a piggyback". He crouched.

I shook my head, what happened to just scooping me up in bridal style.

" Get on my back".He said.

I chuckled and got on his back.

He started walking inside the house singing and jumping a little.

"You're my honeybun,sugarplum,yumpy yumpy yumpkin,the apple of my eye...you're my cupcake,sweetpie" He sang that kindergarten song as we walked inside.

I shook my head and looked up." God who did I offend".I whispered.

He carefully laid me on the couch and went upstairs.

I looked around they were paintings in the lounge.Now I was getting the hang of it,so he was the one who painted the weird portraits, I saw the other day.

I just wondered what his story could be.

He cane back wearing khaki shorts and white T-shirt.He looked good though.

"Ummm you must be hungry babe.Let me cook something for you" He said smiling.

I couldn't help but smile back. ""Sure umm let me just go and take a shower".

I limped upstairs and went to take a shower.

After I was done I walked to Danger's walk in closet.His scent was all over the place.I wore one of his black ripped t-shirts and sat down.I started sobbing while holding on to his shirt.I know it sounds crazy that I was sobbing like this while the same person, with same look and the same everything. The thing is with DID a person acts differently all together.It will be like you're in love with a twin and then you're forced to love another twin.The feeling will be different and you might not be able to tolerate the other alter.I rubbed my hair not knowing where my life was leading me after this.Now I agreed to the fact that fate has wicked sense of humour.

After venting it out I gathered enough courage to go and face Joss downstairs.

On the stairway I was welcomed by a very delicious smell.

I went to the dining and he has already set the table.

"Wow,this looks delicious".I said looking at the pilchards curry pockets,chicken curry and chickpea salad that was on the table.So he was good at cooking. Well Danger only reached the extent of frying eggs and Jon had no idea on how to cook at all.

" Please sit down ma'am".He said bowing down a little and opening a chair for me.

I smiled."Thank you".

He gave me a napkin and started dishing out for me.

"Please enjoy señorita".

I laughed." Señorita? "

"Yes I always wanted to work in a Spanish restaurant. So they refer unmarried woman as señorita". He explained.

I just nodded and started eating." Mmmh this is delicious, why do we need chefs here when you can cook something like this babe".

"You like it?" He asked smiling. Well he is always smiling I guess he forgot that he was acting like Danger.

"I love it". I continued eating. We were in comfortable silence.

After we were done he started clearing the table.

" Thank you señor "I said.

He smiled and just nodded.I realised he wasn't much of talker or maybe he was avoiding talking because he didn't want to sell himself out.Only if he knew.

" Umm I think you should let the helpers clean up".I said when I realised he was taking all the dirty dishes to the kitchen and was planning to wash them.

He smiled."Sometimes I love doing things for myself señorita".

I shook my head smiling. "I will never get used to you calling me señorita but ok.Well let me help you out".

" No don't you're injured remember, just sit down I will be done in a jiffy".He forced me to sit down on the kitchen chairs.

He started doing the dishes. He was humming songs and I must say I kinda enjoyed the whole scene.I mean I managed to take my mind off things.I just wondered about the other things this alter in front of me was capable of doing.

It was already 6pm and I was super tired.

He came with my medication. "Here take this.The doctor said it will make the wounds heal faster and lessens the pain".

" No I don't need the medication thank you".I said.

He didn't budge. "Ohhh so we are going to have problems señorita take the pills now". He tried to put Danger's cold face but failed miserably and the fact that he just had this warmth around him wasn't even helping.

I chuckled and took the medication because we were going to argue all night.

" They make me feel drowsy".

I yawned after a while of taking them.

"Umm let me go prepare a bath for you,so that you can relax before going to bed." He said going upstairs.

I just sighed.I haven't known him for long but he seemed so different with Jon and Danger.Yes each one of them acts their own way bit Danger and Jon has son slightest similarities they both love tattoos and they both can't cook whilst Joss on the hand he was just Joss.It felt like I was with a "familiar stranger".

He came back and helped me walk up the stairs.I went into the tub and IG was relaxing. Whatever he added was working.I walked out when the water was turning cold.I applied the lotion and wore Danger's T-shirt again.

I went into bed and he came with a glass of warm milk.

" Here drink this".I obliged and drank the whole glass.He smiled nervously and moved his face close to mine,then perked my lips and looked away.

"Umm go to sleep,I will join you soon" He stood up.

"Aren't you sending me to mufftown today.I mean its my feet injured not my pussy and besides I miss the wonders you do with your tongue down there" I said mockingly wanting to see his reaction.

He choked and started coughing non stop.I wanted to laugh my lungs out but hey I had to act like I was serious.

"B-but...y-you said you're...feeling drowsy..Y-you should rest ok". He stammered.

I sulked,faking it of course." What have I done babe you're just acting different. What's going on".

He messed his hair,looking worried.Damn I was going to enjoy this."You did nothing wrong ok...I I..just think you should rest please..I will make it up to you."

I continued sulking. He walked back to the bed and cupped my face.He had a good ara around him but I couldn't help but feel that behind the warmness and the happiness he portrayed there was darkness,sorrow and a hollow heart.His lips were trembling he was nervous,I could tell.

I knew this was wrong but I kissed him,I just wanted to feel something and yes I did feel something. The warmness was just something one couldn't resist.The kiss was a slow,soft and filled with so many emotions.

"Go to sleep,I will join you later señorita" He perked my head and walked out.

Within moments I was fast asleep.

When I woke up in the middle of the night he was fast asleep on he bed but faraway from me.

I covered him up and walked out of the room

I tiptoed and went to his study.This was the only moment I had got.The office wasn't in order a lot of papers and files were all over the place.I started looking for something that could help me out.There was nothing serious to consider.Maybe going to his company straight was going to help than being in his house.

I tiptoed back to bed but Joss was no longer there.

I kinda panicked.

I ran to the room where I saw his paintings,e was not there,I went to the kitchen,he wasn't there. I searched for him almost the whole house but he wasn't there.

I ran outside and looked but still nothing, I went to the backyard and almost gave up.I rubbed my head looking up.

"No no no you gotta be kidding me.No please" I ran back inside taking the stairs which reached the rooftop.

I slowly opened the door that leads to the rooftop.

He was standing on the edge that if he took one step he would fall down.

"Leave me alone please". He said softly.

" I can't leave you here alone.Please get back from there".I said nervously trying to move towards him.

He stopped me by raising his hand"Don't take a step closer.I will jump"He looked down.

"Babe why are doing this.What happened.. What went wrong?" I asked.

He zoned out looking so lost in thoughts. "A lot of things are just wrong.This life is just painful to bear.Its better to end it.I know I sound selfish but there is really nothing to live for.Please just go back inside".

I panicked." No no that's not how problems are dealt with.Please go to your happy place you will realise there are so many reasons to live for."

He sighed."There is nothing to live for.When I look back all I see is pain,all I experience is sorrow.I hardly sleep because of the painful memories that will haunt me the moment I close my eyes.This life has taught me that no one is really there for you even the ones who are closest to you,if our own shadow can leave when it's dark then no one can really stay when things start falling apart.Señorita I couldn't find a reason to live for no matter how much I searched for one."

"Can't you see I'm here in front of you..Can't you see that I love you.What do you think will happen to me if you jump off.I love you dammit..I love you don't do this to me.I won't survive loosing you too.I lost my family, I had no one you're the only one for me,I'm begging you don't do this " I said wholeheartedly. At this point I didn't care if it was Jon,Danger or Joss but the sight of seeing him there trying to end his life I couldn't stand it.At this moment I vowed to myself that I would have three hearts if possible.I would learn to love all of them combined, if he was going to develop another alter I would have a fourth heart too.I realised at this moment that what was really lacking in Jon,Danger and Joss' lives is love.

He looked at me with glassy eyes."You meant every word,you said."

I nodded vigorously. He started moving back from the edge. I met him halfway and gave him a bone crushing hug. He clung tightly on me. This sent a message, probably no one had ever said I love you to him which was just something he wanted to hear. Now I knew beneath the warmness and coolness Joss he has a hollow part which just yearns to be loved. Danger on the other side beneath the anger and coldness he had a hollow part which yearned for love as well. Seeing that Jon's alter personalities yearns for love then it want that himself cried for it but none could see it.

Maybe the whole thing was fate after all, if I hadn't spent some time in a mental asylum I could have been in the dark and maybe Joss could have jumped down.

"Let's get inside. Its cold here" I said. We walked back into the bedroom and I helped him to go undercover. He was even shivering. I ran downstairs and made some hot chocolate for him. I helped him drink.

"I'm sorry for being such a selfish bastard". He said looking into my eyes. I wasn't used to his look yet but I was willing to adapt to him too.

I brushed his hair off his forehead." You're not selfish at all. But whenever you feel depressed remember, there is me who is afraid to lose you." I kissed his forehead.

He smiled faintly. I figured out Joss was fragile inside but all jolly on the outside. I felt proud of myself for being able to figure out a lot of things just when I found out the truth about this DID situation.

He was still shivering a little. I went inside and snuggled beside him.

"Thank you señorita".

He whispered

" You're welcome Señor". I smiled and after a while we both drifted to sleep.

When I woke up in the morning he wasn't on the bed. I panicked but realised there was a sticky note on my forehead.

"Hey hey don't panic. I'm fine I'm making breakfast. Drink the warm milk and go take a bath."

Señor"

I sighed in relief and drank the milk he had prepared for me.

He had prepared bath for me so I bathed and wore Danger's T-shirt. A huge part of my heart was still occupied by Danger but one of the days I would have to learn to accommodate Joss and Jon. Well on Jon it was a controversial issue since I didn't know what he felt for me but I would cross the bridge when I get there. Anyway I went downstairs and he was already done preparing breakfast.

"Morning". I perked his lips and he shyly looked away.

"Just cute" I secretly laughed. Now I was certain Joss was a virgin psychologically.

We sat down and enjoyed our breakfast in silence.

End of chapter2 8

Well apologies for the short chapter and typing errors besides kuti the battery is about to die I'm having some problems with my phone because I type too much on it but I will solve the issue soon soon..Hang in there lovies!!!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter2 9

April

"Getting to know him *better"*

We finished our breakfast in comfortable silence after we were done he started clearing the table. I couldn't stop him from doing his dishes because I realized he is a clean freak. After he was done he came to the lounge with a medical kit.

"Ummm señorita I have to dress your wounds now." He held my hands and started taking off the bandages.

"I hope I'm not hurting you".

I wasn't even concentrating to whatever he was saying or doing, I was looking at him, the gentle care he had was something that just soothed my heart.

" Did I hurt you".He repeated because I had literally zoned out.

"Hmm". I dragged my thoughts back to reality.

He smiled." What are you thinking about.I said did I hurt you?"he said bandaging my hands.

"No you didn'tnot at all". I smiled back.

He cupped my face.

"You look beautiful when you smile".

For some reason I felt shy and looked down. My conscience looked at me and was like... "Seriously".

" Thank you". There was awkward silence.

"Ummm I will leave today. I'm sure my girls are worried." I looked down and started playing with my fingers.

He sulked. "Ok fine.. I actually thought we were going to spend some time together but if you want to spend some time with your girls then it's ok".

I smiled inwardly, at least he would miss my presence, that meant something.

"I'm just going to see them then I will sleep here."

He continued sulking. I sat on his laps and he looked down. Bra I was going to enjoy this, its not everyday you meet a shy guy.

" Babe I'm just going to see my girls. I'm not spending much time there ok. You will just drop me off ok. And within an hour or so. I will be back."

He sighed looking down. It looked so damn cute. "Fine...c-can I kiss you". He stammered. Now he had officially forgot he was acting like Danger. If it was him I could have been screaming already.

I nodded, he brushed my cheek and looked into my eyes. He was nervous I could tell because he continuously bit his lower lip.

He breathed in and out then brought his face closer. He gently sucked on my lower lip, I involuntarily parted my lips and responded to the kiss. He was gentle it caused butterflies in my stomach.

He went on slowly but surely. I moaned, I was already horny and I could feel his desire for me on

my vagina,since u was sitting with my leg on the sides on his laps.

He stopped and perked my lips and smiled. "You're beautiful señorita, have I ever told you that".

I nodded and smiled.

" Ok then let's get you to your girls but within an hour or so I will come pick you up,I'm sure you will be done catching up with your girls."

"Ok fine you will pick me up after two hours".

I said.

" Let me go get the car keys.Don't move you will hurt your feet.I will give you a piggyback "He ran upstairs and came back wearing his shorts.I just shook my head and well instead of scooping me up in a bridal style he indeed gave me a piggyback.

He drove to the house and as usual he was singing and smiling all the way.

He perked my cheeks before dropping me off.Well he didn't wanna go in and I knew it was because he didn't want to be caught up in his lie.

I walked in and the girls ran to me well expect Nicki,she wasn't there.

" And where is Nicki".I asked.

"She is asleep". Kiara said.

We went and sat in the lounge.Jenny was watching Life of Kylie.

" So how have you been.You got us so worried."Kiara said holding on to me.

Before I could answer Nicki started shouting. "Turn that motherfucking TV off before I whoop your ass whore".

Jenny rubbed her head." Shit I disturbed her sleep.I'm out of here guys, I'm not ready to duck teapots".She went outside.

Nicki walked in dragging herself.I laughed like she was already acting as if she got a big belly,holding her waist and stuff.

She smiled when she saw me.I guess the TV saga was long forgotten.

"My girl how have you been". She hugged me briefly and went to the fridge.She came back with a weird looking sandwich. I just exchanged a look with Kiara.She shrugged.Jenny later came back and sat down.

" So what did I miss?"I asked.

"Nothing much. We were just advising Jenny about following his heart not what other people

want because you will never be happy." Kiara said.

"Guys you don't understand" Jenny said.

Kiara sighed. "To make you understand I will have to act cupid on you".

Nicki raised her eyebrows. "And what is cupid".

"The god of love, you know the fat baby with wings holding a bow and arrow that's the cupid." I explained

Nicki looked at Kiara. "So you're fat baby, with wings holding a bow and arrow now?"

Kiara just sighed,Nicki's hormones were something. Jenny and I laughed at Kiara.

"Anyway I was saying. Jenny you need to act on your feelings stop acting like you don't care for Max when all of us know that you love him". Kiara said.

" Just give him a chance"I said.

"He is coming so I will tell him.I'm just scared though". She said.

" Gather enough courage my dear."Kiara said.

Nicki was eating non stop.If this is what happens when someone is pregnant then spare me.

"Be like Nicki and Lewis they are each others ride or die..fail or fly" Kiara mocked.

Nicki raised her eyebrow."I'm not a ride or die chick.I have questions like where are we riding to, why do we have to die,am I getting food on the way?That's the questions I got".She said eating her sandwiches.

I just laughed my ass off.

We started doing the girl chatting you know.After exactly two hours Joss came and knocked.

I ran to the door.

I opened,he was holding teddies,roses and a love shaped cake.

"Ohhh my babe". I hugged him.

He kissed and nervously walked in.

Nicki ran to him.

" Hy Danger.I will just take this".He grabbed the cake,sat down and started eating.

"And I will take this". Kiara grabbed the teddy.

" Well I guess I'm taking this" Jenny took the roses.

Joss rubbed his head.I realized that he usually does that when he has no idea what to do next.

"Babe umm...let me go buy something".

I hugged him and laughed" You don't have to buy me anything honey.You're enough for me".

He hugged me back. "Well I have prepared something for you.Let's go"

I smiled."Piggyback "I said opening my arms.

He crouched and I rode on his back.

Nicki came out of the kitchen with cream all over her mouth.

" What are you guys...kindergartens?"She frowned and walked back inside.

Joss was looking confused,I just laughed it off as we went to the car.

He drove in his happy mood as always. When we arrived we went to the lounge, they were three paintings covered with white sheets.

"What are those. Let me see" I tried to uncover them but he stopped and smiled nervously.

" You will see them later. We are going to the exhibition today together. You will see them there ok" He said smiling.

"Ok fine we will go but I don't know how to act, I mean I have never been there." I said.

"Don't worry I will be there anyway, I bought you a dress I hope you will like it." He started playing with his fingers.

I held his hands and kissed them.

"I love everything that you give me señor ok. Now let's go and see the dress" He led me upstairs, the dress was on the bed. My jaws dropped, I covered my mouth.

He looked at me nervously. I hugged him.

"The dress is so beautiful señor."

It was a royal blue lace mermaid dress, with long sleeves, it's the one that covers the whole body but shows off a lot because it's lace. It went along with 6 inch navy blue suede heels.

"I'm glad you like it señorita." He sighed in relief.

"Ok then let's go shower together, then we will go for the exhibition together." I sighed dragging him and he was busy coughing as always. I laughed to myself, it's high time this nigger stop being shy.

I stripped whilst he was just stuck on one place.

I walked to him butt naked,he was just repeatedly swallowing hard."This is not the first time you seeing me naked,come on let's go shower".

I helped him strip while his eyes were just stuck on my boobs.I secretly smirked,I was enjoying this.We went in the shower together,he was like faraway from me.I just laughed and started scrubbing his bag,he was so tensed.

"Hey relax you're so tensed". I went on my knees and gave him a blow job.Have you ever heard a nigger moan,well I did.

Anyway after the naughty shower,we lotioned and he went to the other room to the walk in closet,I guess it was specifically for him.Joss' closet.

I wore the dress and it was surprisingly the right size.It clung perfectly on my body.I wore the heels and they were the right size too.

I applied minimum make up and bunched my hair into a tight neat bun.

He texted me telling me he was downstairs.

I slowly walked down he was smiling holding white roses.

" You look beautiful señorita ".He kissed me passionately and gave me the flowers.

I smiled and put them in the flower vase.

We walked to his Porsche hand in hand.We were chauffeur driven this day.He wasn't singing this time,he was just smiling squeezing my hands.After a while we arrived at the art gallery.

On the entrance there was a red carpet and a lot of journalist.

I nervously looked at him." I thought it was just a small thing señor ".

He laughed." Señorita don't be nervous ok.This is the official opening of my own art gallery,so it has to be a big thing".

I punched him lightly. "At least a heads up was going to be ok.I'm so nervous right now". Well the last time.I saw this much journalist was the day of my court case.After that I have been nervous of these people,the questions they asked me and all just scared the shit out of me.

" Relax señorita you just ignore the journalist and we take a few pictures and went inside. After all there are body guards protecting us so nothing will happen. He walked out of the car and went to open the door for me. The moment I stepped out journalist were all over my face. Thanks to the guards we managed to walk through them. We took a few pictures then walked inside after the gallery was opened. We walked in and the place was beautiful. It was all white inside and glassy tiles. Max, Lewis, Jenny and Nicki were there they were so excited to see me but I was disappointed when Kiara and Gareth were not there but I kinda understood because with Gareth's condition he will have to stay faraway from the public and I knew Kiara would have loved to be here but she sacrificed to be with Gareth.

"Girl you look beautiful" Jenny said.

"You too...look at yourself". She was wearing a boobtube red tight dress.

" And you Nicki" I hugged her, she was wearing a white off shoulder cobweb dress.

"You look gorgeous and it's kinda cute you're matching with Danger." Well Joss was wearing a matching royal blue suit and suede navy formal shoes.

They were portraits on the wall. Anyway we started walking examining each one of them. I may not be an artist but I noticed that on each portrait they would be a child suffering in some sort of a way. People liked them saying they were weird in a good way but I realized something else. They were like pieces of his past unfortunately I couldn't exactly tell what it was that was happening I could only see the suffering part.

Then on the stage like they were those two covered portraits and a grand piano.

"What are those portraits señor". I asked curiously.

He smiled. "Patience my señorita".

Anyway we started talking to different, he also introduced me to many business people that my head even hurt while trying to master their names. All this while I had a feeling of being watched, you know. when you can't brush the thought of someone watching you. Anyway I ignored the feeling and decided to enjoy the moment.

After a while Joss went on the stage and asked for everyone's attention.

"I would like to thank everyone who has honoured my invitation and came here thank you. This may have been the official opening of my art gallery but it is also the day I honour the woman who means so much to me, my one and only señorita."

He ordered some people to open the portraits, everyone gasped in delight. I covered my mouth and started shedding emotional tears.

Nicki and Jenny started rubbing my back. "Ahhh come on girl don't cry. Jesus Jon is gifted."

It was me on the portraits. The other one I was fast asleep with a sheet covering me and my hair messy, it looked so cute. The other one I was laughing with my eyes half closed.

He smiled. "Don't cry señorita, it will break my heart. You mean so much to me more than you think I know it's not been long since we have known each other but it feels like I have known you

forever. I love you señorita".

"Danger will have to forgive me for this". I thought while walking to him. I hugged him and people clapped.

" I love you too". I whispered.

He held my hand and we both sat on the piano stool.

He started playing Purpose by Justin Bieber.

He sang so well like the song was his, he had a beautiful voice.

After he was done, journalists were snapping pictures of us.

After a while Lewis asked to take Joss with him.

I was left alone and I still couldn't shake the feeling of being watched. I turned trying to see who it was but I couldn't catch the culprit.

I decided to secretly follow Lewis, Max and Jon who were in a serious conversation.

"You're in love with her ain't you" Max said firmly.

"Yes I am.I just couldn't stop myself ok.She makes me happy and for once someone managed to stop my suicidal thoughts.She loves me too ok". He said.

Lewis rubbed his head. "But she has no idea that you're an alter ego,she has no idea that you're not Danger".

He sighed." If you want me to tell her the truth I will ok.I love her,I can't stop myself".

Max sighed."You were just to act for a little why,not to catch feelings ok".

"I couldn't pretend with her ok.I know I'm an alter and one day I.might cease to exist bit please allow me to just enjoy this moment with her.For the first time in nine years of my existence I feel

happiness. I now know what it is to be loved. Please don't ask me to stop loving her don't rob me of this. She is the only one who makes me happy, just allow me to be happy for once."

I cried silently as I heard him say that. All he very wanted was to be loved and I was going to love him like that. Danger some day would understand that I did it for all three of them.

I walked away without them or anyone noticing me.

He came back later and hugged me from behind.

"Señor how did you pull everything off. When did you even have got the time to paint me". I asked.

" Well I woke up early and watched you sleep. So I painted you. Then when I dropped you off all that I could see was you laughing, you were in my head so for those two hours I left you, I painted your portrait. You mean the world to me ok" He said emotionally.

I cupped his face. "I love you señor, I love you and nomatter what happens know that your señorita loves you so much ok and I will never stop".

"I love you too." He cupped my face.

Nicki came from nowhere. "Well I hate being the third person but I love you too guys". She kissed both our cheeks and left. I just laughed shaking my head. Anyway the party ended after we had enjoyed so much. It was around 6pm when we left.

When we arrived back him. Joss was super tired and I understood him. He had spent half the day painting, organising the opening it was really too much for him. I gave him a blow job and he slept immediately.

I went and decided to cook something for him. While I was at it I received a call.

"Hello". I answered without checking the caller ID.

The person remained quiet. I checked the ID, it was a private number.

"Ok if you don't wanna say anything we gonna do the breathing competition until your airtime runs out."

Still the person remained quiet. I hung up because it was getting pretty weird.

I continued cooking, after a while Joss came downstairs. He was yawning rubbing his eyes looking cute.

"Señor come and eat". I said.

" What did you prepare for me señorita ?"he asked sitting down.When he saw the chicken curry he smiled.

"My favourite".

He started digging in while I watched him.

My phone rang again and it was the private number again.

I answered.

" Hello if you don't want to say anything then don't call me".I shouted,I was pissed.Joss held my hand and squeezed it.

trying to calm me down.

"April". A deep voice said.

I froze.

Saul.

" She makes me happy".

All this while Ruth was the only thing in my mind. I know it was wrong for me to think about her while I was married and had a kid but can you blame me. The girl is beautiful and my heart just leaped for her. I have never felt this for anyone before. Also I had refrained myself from the dangerous I was having because I got to learn that she was Jon's girl but after watching the news I got to know she was no longer Jon's girl but then again I was a married man.

Eve snapped her fingers at me. "What are you thinking about, I'm talking to you".

"What were you saying?" I asked.

She sighed and looked down. "Saul just because you got a hold on my father you're treating me like this. I know I have been nothing but a bad wife but Saul meet me halfway I'm trying here".

Well ever since I snapped at his father Eve had just drastically changed.

She was working less, spending time with Ali.

I kissed her."Sorry babe something was just in my mind".

"I was saying are you coming back for lunch today, I will be cooking"

I almost choked.

Eve cooking, what is the world getting to.

I smiled and brushed her cheek."I will eat your cooking honey.Now I have to go,I have a case to work on".

I kissed her and Ali then walked out.I drove to work and worked on the case.Well.it was a walk over after all I was getting help from Mr Collins the most famous lawyer who is good at manipulating as well as intimidation. He wants worked on this complicated case five years ago between a mother and daughter.Well that was before he started working for me.

"All you have to do is to tell the judge what you have seen, the date and the time. Everything will be sorted out, leave that to me". He told the only witness to the rape case we were handling. Mr Collins is actually a criminal lawyer and usually he would stand for the guilty but this time I forced him to stand for the innocent. I wasn't going to be able to stand it if a rapist walks away freely.

The teenage boy nodded. "Ok sir".

He started narrating his story. It was very convincing but the judge decided to pass the verdict the following day. We walked out of the courtroom with Mr Collins telling me that he had already won the case. I bid my goodbyes and drove off. On my way home I saw a girl sitting on a bench with her head buried in her hands. I wanted to drive off but something told me to stop. I went to where she was and sat beside her.

"Hey". I said softly.

She lifted her head, it was Ruth with a swollen face and puffed eyes.

"Hey hey what's wrong?" I asked.

She just wailed in my arms. "He doesn't love me anymore... But I still do, I can't stop myself. I tried going away from him, right now I'm trying to stop the urge to see him but it's getting harder by the day. What should I do".

I didn't know how to comfort her but I could feel her pain, it's like my own heart was being stabbed a million times by seeing her cry like this.

"Hey it's ok, don't cry".

She cried for a while then stopped taking some pills. "What are those" I kinda panicked.

She smiled bitterly. " Antidepressants. "

She drank the pills.

"Its funny that whenever I see you I just want to cry my heart out but I don't even know your name. I forgot to ask the other day at the mall and at the party."

I smiled. "I'm Saul Harrington "

I said. She looked at my wedding band.

"And you're happily married. Anyway thank you for being my shoulder to cry on, your wife is one lucky lady. I'm not staying now I have vented it out, I have to go. Once again thank you". She stood up. I did as well.

" He is not worth your tears,you deserve better."I said.

She smiled."I know but I don't know how I'm going to stop myself from loving him because its complicated very complicated. "

I sighed."I understand .Do you mind if I drop you off".

She shrugged."Of course I don't mind who says no to free transport ".

I opened the door for her and she went in.She gave me the directions and I reached the apartment within fifteen minutes.

" Umm can I have your number,I mean I would love to check on you".

She sighed and looked at me ."I really appreciate your concern but I can't give you my number.You're married man Saul don't worry about me focus on your family. I come with a lot of baggage there would be a time where I need someone to talk to at around am I can't really call you at that hour because it's your family hour and you're married it will be so inappropriate. Maybe some day you will help.me.out again just through coincidence. I'm sorry I can't give you my number.I hope you understand".

I was quiet impressed by her level of reasoning. "I understand very well Ruth and I'm quiet impressed by your reasoning and honesty."

She smiled and walked out of the car.I drove off all smiles.She might have refused to give me her number but I was going to meet her again.

When I parked outside my house that's when I remembered I was supposed to have lunch with my family.I sighed and walked inside.I found Eve playing with Ali,which was a first.

"Hey my lovely two ladies". I said kissing them both on the cheeks.

Eve looked at me and sulked." I thought we were supposed to have lunch together".

"I'm sorry dear,I just got caught up in something". I said.

She sighed." Now I know exactly how you felt when I used to arrive home late.I can't really change everything overnight Saul,I had made a lot of mistakes in this marriage and I was really at the verge of breaking it.I really want us to work.Anyway I left some food for you in the microwave let me go warm it up for you".She gave me Alina and walked to the kitchen.I was left with confusion running through my head,this really wasn't Eve she was Eve's look alike or maybe this was a sign that I should give our marriage one last chance.

She came back with the food."I googled some recipe on the internet well I tried my best ".She said nervously.

I smiled." You didn't have to go all the way though babe.Anyway let me just dig in".

I started eating, well it wasn't really that bad.

"For someone who had no idea on how to cook at all this is really delicious. I wouldnt mind eating this everyday". I said

She smiled." Thank you.Umm I was thinking of leaving my career and focus more on this family".

I was shocked." No you don't have to leave something you love Ever.Do your modelling career but you should learn to balance the two.You should always know that family comes first no matter what.I'm loving this change but don't loose yourself in the process."I hugged her butmy conscience on the other hand was like "this is too good to be true", but I brushed it off anyway. We both tucked Ali to sleep and went into our room.

It was beautifully decorated and beneath the nightgown she was wearing she had a strawberry lingerie on.

" I thought maybe I should spice things up".She said walking towards me.For the first time I felt nervous like I was going to do something very wrong.All I could see was Ruth crying on the bench,I don't even know why I was thinking about her at this moment after I had vowed to gibe my marriage a second chance.Now I didn't know what to do,I just froze.

End of chapter2 9

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter3 0

Gareth.

"Right by my side".

My life has just been miserable for me so far. All I can say is I had successfully quarantined myself from everyone, but Kiara was having none of it. She has always been there for me but I was keeping a distance from her, it was going to hurt me to know that the only person I was developing feelings I react to their touch in a negative way. I was attending my therapy sessions but nothing was changing, nothing was working. After one of the sessions I tried handshaking someone I reacted even more worse, I was even red all over my face and a lil bit swollen.

"Wake up Gareth,we are going for your sessions". Kiara's voice dragged my thoughts back to reality.

" I'm not going Kiara don't even try to force me."I said.

"Ohhh I'm so going to do that.Gareth you will never heal if you become reluctant like this.Stop all the negative thoughts and have faith Gareth you will be fine." She said.

I snapped."Kiara you don't get it do you.I have been doing nothing but sessions and doing everything the shrink asks me.It's not even helping and you know that.Instead of healing I'm getting worse."

She sighed. "Gareth,its all in your mind.Besides you can't expect to heal in just a month.You're at stage two of OCD Gareth its not something that cannot be changed overnight. It needs patience and positivity ok".

I snapped again." So why am I fucken seeing the shrink if it needs time.I don't have that time Kiara ok right now my life is literally on hold because of this,I can't go out, I can't attend my business meetings, I just stay at home isolating myself from the world and you fucken tell me to have patience. My patience ran out ok,I have non left."I shouted.

"Gareth patience pains but pays.Patience. is a virtue.You need to go see a shrink" Kiara said

I stood up vigorously. "Stop forcing me you're not my mother or wife ok".

Her lips started trembling and her eyes were glassy.I only realised what I have just said after I had already said it.

" Kiara I didn't mean...!"Before I could finish the statement she walked out slamming the door.

How could I say something like that to someone who has been there for me through it all.Now she was going to leave me.

The thought of it made me hell nervous,I just sat down not knowing what to do next.After taking a long boring shower I went downstairs.

I was surprised to see Kiara cooking downstairs, I was sure she was going to leave me after what I have said to her.

She started dishing out for me without saying a word.

I swallowed hard"Kiara look i--"

She interrupted. "Shut the fuck up and eat your food"

My jaws dropped. Kiara is always the sweetest person I have ever seen but this facial expression she had on,I have never seen it before.She looked serious and meant every word.I started digging in and she was also eating.

After we were done she started clearing the table and then washing the dishes.

"Kiara look I'm sorry about what I said earlier,I didn't mean it ok.I just snapped I'm sorry".

She roughly threw the towel in the sink and looked at me." Get your ass down Gareth".She said firmly.

"Huh?" I asked looking shocked.

She folded her arms."I didn't stutter.Get your ass down".

I sat down silently. She held her waist."Listen and listen very carefully. Gareth you're no longer a kid you hear me.I'm done babysitting your ass you're grown ass man and you need to act like it.You said i shouldn't act like your mom right but where is she right now,is she here to babysit you.I shouldn't be like your wife right,do you have one who has the patience and tolerance that I have.Look I understand you're going through a lot, its not easy to accept the fact that one has a mental condition but not accepting it is not going to change anything instead you should

embrace it. I was diagnosed of bipolar Gareth I embraced it and did my sessions and now here I am looking healthy. You should stop sitting around and feeling sorry for yourself because you're giving that man who did all that to you the satisfaction.

You need to man up and be positive because everything is starting from the brain, your brain. Like I said it takes time because you're already on stage two, if you keep on being negative like this you will reach stage three. Now it's up to you, I'm no longer going to force you or try to convince you, it's up to you to decide if you want to continue this treatment or not but when you make a decision you must remember that there are people like me who care about you who wants nothing but the best for you. It's up to you Gareth... up to you.. only you".

She turned and started doing her dishes.

"Kiara i--"

She raised her hand.

"Don't even say anything. I'm done talking to you".

She wiped her hands and walked out.

I sat down and sighed.

I took my phone and dialed Doctor Gomez's number. She answered on the first ring.

" Hello doctor its Gareth here" I said.

"Ohhh Gareth are you coming for you session today". She asked.

" Yes yes sure I'm coming after an hour or so. I actually called because I need a favor ". I said.

" What favor dear?" She asked.

"I actually want to double my sessions. Make them twice during the weekdays and on weekends make them thrice if possible. I will pay". I said.

"Wow that's a surprise hearing that from you, anyway I will do as you say and inform you about the time, wait for my text". She said and hung up.

I went and took a shower. After I was done I wore my usual all white attire and combed my hair. I made sure I took the sanitizer with me and walked out. When I passed by the lounge Kiara was watching her favourite show.

I cleared my throat. "Ummm im going to the session now".

Her eyes didn't leave the TV. "Ok safe journey".

"A-arent you coming with me". I asked.

"No I'm not, I'm sure you're a grown ass man who knows his way to the mental asylum, if you don't then ask your GPS I ain't the one to address". She stood up and started walking upstairs.

I ran and blocked her way, I couldn't touch her.

" Are you still mad at me Kiara because of what I said earlier, I swear I didn't mean it".I said with pleading eyes.

She sighed."You didn't mean it but its the truth Gareth.I'm either your mother or wife and maybe I was caring for you way too much.Right now I'm just doing what I was supposed to do way back.Now move out of my way or do you want me to touch you"She said.

I sulked and moved out of the way.She walked then stopped.

"And maybe when you come back,I will be gone."

I looked at her with pleading eyes."Babe I'm begging you please don't leave me ok.Please I swear I will go crazy.I will loose the already senses that I'm left with please Kiki".

She just looked at me and walked away.

I sighed and drove to the mental asylum.I realised that I was sort of pushing her away with my

actions,yes I should keep a distance but maybe she had had enough.

I only prayed and hoped that she doesn't give up on me.

I did my session and it was better because I was participating and concentrating in every aspect,even Doc was impressed. After I was done I left.On my way I decided to buy Kiara her favourite deodorant. I knew I was going to risk it by going to where a lot of people will be but I gathered enough courage and walked inside the perfumes shop.

I found the perfume that I wanted and immediately paid for it.When I was walking out I bumped into someone. I ran to my car ignoring people who were giving me the looks.I drove like a maniac back to my place.By the time I reached the house my face was swollen and had rush all over.I went inside and closed the door breathing heavily and scratching.

I was delighted when I saw Kiara running down the stairs.

"I heard some noise...what's happe---...Ohhh my God Gareth". She said with glassy eyes.

I smiled bitterly while scratching and the other hand I was holding her deodorant.She looked at it ten back at me." You went to the mall?"She asked.

I nodded."Yes I wanted to buy something for you that will cool down your anger.."

She ran to me."No no Kili don't!".it was too late she gave me a bone crushing hignv and held me tightly. It felt so good to be in her arms but then again the allergy.I tried to push her off but she was too powerful for me.

She slowly let go."I'm sorry I just--"

She looked at me and then cupped my face.

"Ohhh my God Gareth come look at your face on the mirror".

" Noo nooo I know that I look ugly".She forcibly dragged me to the mirror.

"Ohhh God". I said touching my face.

I smiled at her.

"Its disappearing, the rushes are disappearing Kiki...b-but how come..you're touching me right now".

I looked at where she was holding me.The reaction was slowly disappearing. I huhhed her.

"Ohhh God you're my cure Kiara."

She laughed."Actually its all in your brain.But anyway I'm still mad at you"She pushed me off.

I sulked."I'm sorry ok.Here is your gift"

I gave her the perfume she smiled and kissed my cheek."You're the best."

She was about to walk away but I held her waist.

"I long wanted to do this" I said looking into her eyes. She looked down.

"Do what ?" She asked softly.

"This". I kissed those damn tiny lips like my life depended upon it. She responded immediately and wrapped her arms around my neck.

We stopped when things were about to get heated up.

" It feels so damn good to be able to touch you. Do you know how much I longed for this. I was so scared that when I touch I would react but it turned out otherwise. Noe you're my only hope and you're the only reason that I needed to have a positive mind. Now I know I will be fine Kiara. Thank you so much for being with me from the word go, I don't know what could have happened to me if you weren't there for me Kiki. I don't know how to thank you for everything you have done for me so far."

She smiled and cupped my face. "It also feels good to be in your arms Gareth. There are times I badly wanted to hug when I saw you breaking down but I couldn't, today I couldn't stop myself and trust me it was going to kill me had you reacted even more worse to my touch but I'm glad it turned out otherwise. I'm so glad that I can touch you without being afraid."

We hugged and my phone rang.

I answered. "Mom"

"Hey Gareth will you come over for lunch today". As usual she never asked how I have been.

"I'm good and you mother." I said sarcastically.

She sighed. "I'm fine will you come over Gareth. Its important "

I rolled my eyes. "Fine".

I hung up.

I couldn't really say no to her. I loved my mother despite her not being there for me all my life.

"Kiki will you go with me to the family lunch please." I asked.

She sighed. "Am I needed there.?"

"I don't care about that Kiki I'm just going with you.Let's go shower". I dragged her to the bathroom and we took an innocent shower together.

After that we both dressed in all white semi casual clothes and drove off.On the way I would repeatedly touch her thigh and smile.

We arrived after thirty minutes.Kiara was just amazed seeing the mansion, the security and all but I was rather disgusted by the place.

We walked in and I found the old man in a serious conversation with Mr Cornell.

He lifted his head up and saw me,then he looked at Kiara and frowned.

" I thought I informed your mother that only you're needed here and it is a family lunch".he said firmly.

Kiara looked at me."In as much as I remember loyalty is the only thing that makes one family. Kiara is my family so old man you better relax and suck it up because you're so going to see more of her here."

He wanted to retaliate but he kept quiet because Mr Cornell was around.

While we were still throwing daggers at each other mom came downstairs holding hands with

Zendaya.

"Ok what the fuck is going on here?" I asked with a firm face.

"Mind your language boy.Let's all sit down." The old man said.

Mom came to me and tried to hug me but I slightly pushed her off.

"Son what's going on" She said.

"Maybe I should ask you what's going on". I asked.

" Let's sit down son."Kiara looked at me and we all sat down.

"Son this is Zendaya Cornell" Mom said.

I looked at Zendaya and she frowned and looked away."Who doesn't know her.What is she doing here? ".I said.

"Ummm she is our future daughter in law,your wife son.Well she has a three year old son who will be your step-son. " The old man sighed.

I laughed."You're all sick in the head.I ain't gonna marry this girl you hear me.I already love someone else.So this shit ain't gonna happen".I held Kiara's hand.

Mr Johns forcefully held my hand and I reacted immediately. Kiara held me and the reaction slowly disappeared without them noticing.

"Don't touch me. Don't you ever lay your filthy hands on me you hear me". I said firmly

He sighed. " Sit down and let's talk son".

Hearing him saying son made me want to puke.

Kiara looked at me and squeezed them in assurance.

"There is nothing to talk about if you want Zendaya so much then make her your second wife." I said.

Mom gasped."Gareth!!"she shouted.

"No stop Garething me.You have no right whatsoever to choose a wife for me because I can do that myself.You expect me to marry Lewis's ex are you kidding me.I'm not going to marry her and thats final.Babe let's go". I held Kiara's hand and we walked out.

We drove off in silence.

" I don't think he is going to give up anytime soon."Kiara said.

"If that happens then he will leave me no choice than to expose him." I said.

"Of course that will happen but you need evidence for that remember". She said.

I nodded." Fine we will need a plan first because if I drag this longer he will make my life miserable and I can't believe mom is also supporting this shit".

I sighed and she hugged me."Everything is gonna be fine,I'm here right beside you".

"Yea right by my side". I smiled.

Saul.

" I'm trying to forget her but its not working".

The previous night I kinda denied having sex with Eve and she surprisingly understood. I was feeling guilty, I couldn't do it,I was just thinking about Ruth.I couldn't do it to her.The following morning she prepared for me breakfast in bed.I ate and she prepared a bath for me.This was just way too good for me.Anyway I bathed and found her changing Alina's diaper.

"What happened to the Eve that I know" I murmured.

"Babe we are going for shopping. I hope you do not have a case today and you're free". She said feeding Alina her bottle.

" Well umm I do not have a case. We will go for shopping but i do not know what to wear" I said

"I chose some cloths for you. Make it snappy. I will be waiting in our car." She walked out.

I just shrugged and went to the walk in closet. I wore the blue jeans and a white t-shirt, with white Nike sneakers.

I walked to the car and we drove off in silence.

We started baby shopping for Alina, then we went to buy my favourite cologne and suits. Then we went to the ladies shop. I was already super tired. She started doing her thing. I was holding Ali and she just started wailing. I tried shushing her down but she was having none of it.

"Let me help you out with her." The voice made me froze as my heart missed a beat.

I turned and looked at her. She was shocked to see me."Ummm ahh Ruth".

She smiled."We meet again.Let me handle her."

She took Alina and then girl started smiling showing off her toothless mouth.

"Ohhh my God she is starting to develop some milk teeth." She said closely examining Ali's open mouth.

"Ohhh really I didn't notice." I said.

We stood there in total silence while she played with Ali. I enjoyed the cute scene and even forgot that Eve was in the same shop.

"What's going on here." Eve's voice startled both of us.

She went and roughly took Ali from Ruth.

"Umm Ruth this is Eve my wife." I said.

Ruth smiled and spread his hand for a handshake. Eve just looked at it and frowned.

Ruth sighed. "Umm I will leave you Mr and Mrs Harrington. I have some work to do". She walked away.

I sulked. "Eve your behavior was so uncalled for. She is just someone I know there was really no need to give her an attitude like that."

She frowned and walked to the car. We drove off in silence. By the time we arrived home Ali was fast asleep. We went to her room and tucked her in.

"I'm sorry about the way I behaved earlier I have been nothing but a bad wife. Seeing you looking at that girl I just became insecure. It's like you were so impressed by her which is something I failed to do. All I did was upsetting you but I'm going to try and win you back come what may. I love you Saul. I'm sorry for the shit that I put you through for the past nine years and I know it will be hard for you to believe me but I will do anything to win your trust and be a good wife as well as to be a good mother." She hugged me and I just hugged her back and walked out.

I felt like all this change was a little bit too late but maybe I should just give our marriage a second chance.

I sighed sitting down now I was stuck between a rock and a hard place.

I finally drifted to sleep while lost in my thoughts. After a while I woke up and went downstairs. I found Eve on the phone, she didn't notice I was there.

"Dad I know.... I know... geez stop pressurizing me ok... I do things at my own pace... God will you be patient already.." She hung up and turned.

"Ummm b-abe you're awake already. Let me prepare something for you" She said and walked away immediately.

I couldn't shake the feeling that something was really up with Eve.

April.

"Getting closer to the *truth".*

When that anonymous person called they never said anything but I had a feeling that the person was my so called father. I never tried to contact him because he was using a private number. I have been super tensed and worried. Joss has been always there for me making me laugh and it really helped to keep my mind off things.

"Babe are you done. I have already chose a dress for you. Nicki has been calling non stop saying she misses you" Joss said while waiting on the bathroom door. I walked out butt naked and he cleared his throat.

I laughed and stated applying lotion. He slowly came to me and cupped my breasts.

"Maybe we can do something naughty before you go señorita how about that."

Ok when did Joss master the courage to do this.

"Something like what?". I said biting my lower lip. He shushed me and carefully laid me on the bed and boom I was sent to mufftown. After screaming my lungs out I finally came and he kissed me.

"Wow señor that was amazing. I love you". I kissed him. He smiled.

"I love you too. Señorita if something happens to me know that I love you always ok". He said with a serious tone.

I got off the bed and started dressing up without saying a thing. I was just emotional all of a sudden. It's like he knew he was about to go to sleep letting Danger or Jon take over. Well I had missed Danger but I had grown to love him so much and laughing at his joke. He just makes me smile always now he was talking like this. I was super upset.

"Señorita did I say something wrong?" He asked looking worried.

I was already crying which is so not like me."How can you say something like that huh.You're talking as if you're going somewhere and you're never coming back.I hate it,I hate is so much.Why do you have to say such things huh.Do you think I will be able to survive without you,who will make me laugh?who will paint my portraits?Answer me señor ".

He hugged me." I'm sorry I didn't mean to upset you.

I sighed and prayed silently that Danger forgives me for what I was about to ask. "Make love to me".

" Huh?"He said nervously.

"Make love to me señor, I miss you and imhealed now."

I'm sure he wanted to protest but I didn't give him the chance to. I smashed my lips on his. One thing led to another and within a minute I was moaning his name, digging my nails deep into his skin as he made sweet gentle love to me.

He shot his load and we looked on the ceiling as we caught our breathe.

"That was amazing. Thank you so much señorita". He said brushing my cheek.

I perked his lips." No matter what happens to you just know that I love you so much Joss". I said looking in his eyes. When I said Joss his eyes popped out.

I chuckled."Why are you looking like you have seen a ghosts remember when you ran me over you sent me flowers under the name Joss,so I just wanted to teas you about it but I actually think it suits you.Joss is quiet a beautiful name."

He smiled."You're right its a beautiful name.Now let's get you home before Nicki shows up here."

We took a quick shower and he drove me to my apartment.

I kissed him goodbye and went inside. The moment I stepped in Nicki hugged me wailing. Jenny was busy on the TV ignoring her.

I rubbed her back softly and helped her sit down "Ok what's wrong Nicki?"

She played an audio on her phone. It was actually her ordering Lewis what she wanted to eat.

I looked at her with confusion. "And then?"

She sighed. "I recorded this audio for Lewis when I replayed it I heard the most annoying ugly voice I have ever heard. How can my voice be this annoying. Is it because I'm pregnant". She said with glassy eyes.

I shushed her. "Its ok honey you have the most beautiful voice ever".

She smiled and went to the kitchen probably to look for something to eat.

"How have you been Jenny" I asked.

She sighed . "The twins want me to live with them. I'm kinda stressed about it".

"Then go live with them and I'm sure you and Max will be pretty close" I said.

"That is exactly what's scaring me. I'm afraid to lose my morals when I'm around Max" She said.

"Go for it girl." I smiled at her.

Nicki came back after she was done eating.

She sat besides Jenny and looked at her."Jenny I'm bored let's go and drink mouthwash".

Jenny rolled her eyes."Your pregnancy is making you loose your mind too".

Nicki stood up and held her waist."I was trying to tell you politely that your breathe stinks whatever you had for lunch is not doing you any favours"

I lauhjed my ass off.Jenny frowned."It is the smells of your disgusting sandwich not my mouth,I

just ate icecream so leave me alone. "

They started exchanging words but I managed to stop them before they get physical. "Girls we should go for shopping the four of us and catch up a little."

Jenny nodded."I second you on that and we should buy the guys something too".

Nicki rolled her eyes."What do men really like apart from other women"

Nicki is always Nicki we just ignored her and continued chatting.

After a while Lewis, Max,Kiara and Gareth came.I was surprised to see Gareth though but the whole time he was just by Kiara's side.

They called Jenny and Nicki.

"Ok I need to also here what you guys are talking about." I said because they were acting dodgy around me.

"Ok we need you to sit down April and relax." Max said.

"Just fucken tell me what's wrong ok.Where is Jon?" I asked.They all kept quiet and looked down.

"Where the fuck is Jon??!!!" I shouted.

Kiara looked at Gareth."Jon was involved in a car accident. He is at Johns hospital right now".Kiara dropped the bomb.I felt like the walls of the room were curving in.

"W-what?" I said softly.

"We need to hurry now. We left the doctors working on him he was seriously injured". Max said. Whatever they said afterwards just disappeared into thin air.

I ran out of the room and went straight to Johns. The others caught up with me on the way and they dragged me to the car. Max drove like a maniac. When we arrived we didn't have to wait much longer the doctor came afterwards.

I ran to him." How is Jon?" I asked breathing heavily.

"Are you his family." He said with an attitude.

I held him by his collar and shook him vigorously. "I'm his fucken everything. Tell me what happened now".

Max and Lewis tried to remove my hands from his collar but they were just wasting their energy.

" He broke his right arm and neck.However he lost a lot of blood.He needs blood, we couldn't find his type in the blood bank.If we don't get blood as soon as possible we might loose him".I lost the little energy I had and fell down.

"We need to inform his father". Lewis said.

"It will be too late by then" The doctor said.

End of chapter3 0

Let's comment and share!

Love in a hopeless place.

Written by RoyalVelz.

Chapter3 1

April.

"I will do anything to save him."

"It will be too late to save him if you wait for his father?.What the fuck is your job then if you can't save his life huh". Max held his collar.

" We are doing everything we can Mr Jackson...we just need the blood so that we can save him.We are wasting time right now. "The doctor nervously said.

" Test my blood and see if its a match"Lewis said.

"I don't think it will match" Max said.

Lewis looked at him and sighed."Its worth a try bro".

The doctor went with Lewis and they later came back.

"It didn't match" He said sadly.

"I wanna go for it too" Gareth said.

"If it doesn't match up,I will try to" Kiara said and they walked in.

I was pacing up and down,scared as shit.

They came back again and still the blood didn't match.

"Let me go guys and give it a try". Nicki said.

I just sighed and sat down.They went with her and after a while they came back.

" And now?"I asked.

"They couldn't do anything I'm pregnant." She said and sat down.Jenny went and still it didn't match.

"So what do we do now.Time is running out". The doctor said.

" I'm the last hope guys if it doesn't match then I don't know what to do "I followed the doctor nervously.

He tested the blood and sighed." Its a match".

I smiled."Let's go and donate please before it's too late".

"Sure ma'am follow me".

We walked to the room Jon was in.They divided the room with a curtain and connected the codes which passed blood between us.They starter drawing the blood and by each drop I felt powerless because I hadn't eaten.

After a while the process was done.I was upset that I couldn't see Jon

The nurses helped me out because I felt powerless.

The team ran to me.

" How did it go?"Lewis asked.

"I just donated the blood.I'm weak right now I need something to eat." I said weakly.

They took me to the cafeteria and I ate some food.

After a while the doctor came,we all ran to him.

"How did it go?" I asked.

"He responded to the blood very well but we are doing all we can.He is not awake yet we are just waiting for him to wake up.He is still unconscious". He said.

"When is he going to be awake doctor" I asked.

"We did our job,its up to him now" He said.

"Can we see him now" Max asked.

"Yes you can but one at a time" He said and walked away.

"You go first" Jenny said

I got up and nervously followed the nurse.I cried after seeing him connected to the machines like that.He had a bandage around his head.I sat down and held his hand.

"Babe you will make it through,you're strong, you will fight this señor. You can go through this.I just want you to wake up babe please.You can fight this" I said kissing his hand.

I walked out and the others took turns to see him.

We drove back in silence. I was just crying looking out of the window.

Jenny squeezed my hand."He will be fine April.I'm glad your blood matched."

I just continued crying looking out of the window. "I don't want to loose him.Guys I don't know what to do if something happens to him.I will not survive it."

Max rubbed my back softly."He will pull through he is a strong guy.Don't give up on him yet"

I just sighed and looked away. We arrived home and I just went straight to my room. I just sat down not knowing what to do. I was certain about one thing, I would never be able to live without him... I was never going to be able to survive without my *"3 faced man"*

While I was still lost in my thoughts my phone rang. This time it wasn't a private number but an unknown number.

"Hello who is this?" I asked.

The person chuckled. I couldn't tell if it was a male or female because the person had uses the voice changing application so they were sounding like a robot.

"This was just a warm up more is to come if you don't stay away from Jon. Stay away from him you may save many lives, his and yours included".

I stood up vigorously." Who the hell are you.Who the fuck are you coward come and face me."

"I'm your worst nightmare. Now be a good girl and do what I have told you.Stay away from Jon".

They hung up.I tried to call the number but it was no longer in service.

" Fuck this shit"I ran to the living room where everyone was.

"The accident was intentional. It wasn't really an accident." I shouted.

Everyone gasped."What are you saying April.Where are you getting all that "Max asked

" Someone called me and I recorded the whole conversation. I couldn't hear their voice because it was modified.Listen to this".I played the audio by the time I was done Max had already informed five guards to guard Jon at the hospital.

"Guard the girls I need to pay someone a visit. I think I suspect Julian.You guys be safe I have to go have a word with her." I said and went to change into jeans,vest and boots.

"You also need protection April.If something happens to you Danger will never forgive us" Lewis said.

I smiled."Don't worry I have that covered guys.I'm protected more than you think but if you want to send guards with me to ease your hearts then its ok."

"If you want I can go with you". Lewis said.

I shook my head." No take care of Nicki.Your lives are all in danger because of me.She is pregnant and she needs the security more than anything else.Stay safe I will be fine,I'm just going to have a word with a woman who gave birth to me".

They all nodded but I could see the hesitation. I assured them and walked out.I called an uber and gave them the directions.Well I obviously knew where the house was.On our way I saw two black cars I knew the shadows were following me.Then there was a black hammer too that was probably Max's security.

After minutes I had arrived Saint Monica suburb in front of a huge mansion. They were guards on the gate.

I knew I was going to have a difficult time.

I called Beiley.

He answered on the first ring.

"Sis" He said.

"I'm at the gate and I know the guards will give me a hard time make a plan" I said firmly and hung up.

After a minute or so he texted me saying I should enter.

I walked in fearlessly.

After a while I reached the front huge door and it opened automatically.

I stepped in and every step I made my heart broke into pieces. So this was important more than me, my mom sacrificed my dignity for this.

There was no one in the lounge.

"Julian come down here.... Julian...Julian come down here come face me bitch". My voice echoed in the room.

After a while he came walking downstairs wearing a white silk gown with a face mask.

I looked at her and my anger just fueled." We are blessed ain't we...the only daughter vis--"

She didn't finish her statement because I pinned her against the wall. I was even scared of the power and anger I had inside. She looked at me with eyes popped out.

The guards tried to hold me but I choked her.

"One more move towards me she is dead. This time a real murder".

They all stopped on their tracks. Julian's eyes were rolling back and she was struggling to

breath I loosened my grip and let her go she fell down and started coughing.

" The reason why I'm not killing you today is because you gave birth to me and you took care of me for 18years.Now tell me if or not you're behind Jon's accident".I shouted.

The man I used to call dad and Beiley came to the lounge.

When that good for nothing Mr June saw me he stopped on his tracks and looked at me.We haven't met since I have come out of the asylum.

"A-pril...y-youre here.." He stammered.

"Yes and in flesh". I just looked at Beiley,we had to pretend.

" And you dear brother ".I said sarcastically. He just smirked and winked at me.

"Anyway I'm not here for the chitchats and playing happy family. Now Julian talk before I do something I will never regret and trust me this time I will walk away freely after killing you. Are you the one behind Jon's accident".

She was still sitting down. I went and knelt besides her with a scary face. She shifted uncomfortably. "I know nothing about Jon's accident. I may be everything but not a murder".

I laughed sarcastically. "If you're capable of drinking poison just to frame your own child then you can do anything. I'm sure your guardian angel is somewhere saying "if I keep on being with this bitch I will loose my job and end up in hell with this motherfucker." You're beyond the word evil. Now tell me the damn truth" I shouted squeezing her hand. Call me names or whatever but this woman ruined my life. I was done playing daughter.

She shivered. "I swear I might love money and everything but im not behind this. I know nothing about this".

Well I have spent eighteen years with this woman so I knew she was telling the truth, she was behind this and unfortunately she was my only suspect. I couldn't suspect Ruth she wasn't this

evil.

I received a call at that moment, it was a private number. I answered. "Who is it".

The robotic voice laughed. "You will never find out about me, I vanish into thin air. Just do as I have instructed you and stay the fuck away from Jon. If I really want to kill Jon those stupid guards won't even stop me."

I sighed bitterly. "Then you're messing with no average bitch you hear me. Bring everything you can and you will watch how I fight for the man that I love. Bring it on"

I hung up.

I looked at Julian who was now standing besides her husband. "I'm only sparing you for today but we are not done. If you had a hand in this Julian then trust me this bare hands will kill you. You would wish I was not the sperm that survived, you would regret not using a condom."

I looked at Mr June.

"And you I thought you loved me but I guess I was wrong".

He looked down." April I'm sorry i--"

"You wanted money right,now you got it so don't apologize for shit now let's see what will happen if I find my father,you will sleep in the streets". I said firmly.

I walked to the door and looked one more time at them then walked out.I went inside the uber and rubbed my head roughly. Who was messing with me.I instructed the driver to take me to John's hospital. I was going to see my man I didn't care about that idiot with a robot voice.

Nothing had changed he was still fast asleep or unconscious whatever.

The doctor came to check on him.

" This ain't the visiting hours".He said with an attitude.

"I don't care this hospital belongs to Gareth which means it practically belongs to Jon too so I do what I want. Now tell me do you have a problem with that". I said looking serious.

" My apologies Miss April". He started examining Jon.

"Why is he not waking up. If he is responding to the blood that I have him and the medicine then why is he still unconscious?" I asked

"We are doing all we can". He said.

I held his collar and pinned him against the wall. Being a doctor is a calling, do your work with all your heart not for the sake of it you hear me. It's a serious vocation being a doctor. Don't just apply your degree ok do it with your heart because my man is your lab rat to apply what you learnt, he is a man with a life on stake do it with your heart. You hear me"

He nodded nervously and I let him go,he fell down."I heard you ma'am".He walked out immediately.

I called Max.He answered on the first ring.

"Are you safe" That was his first question.

"Im fine.I'm at the hospital right now.Send someone with clothes because I will be sleeping over." I said.

"Ok fine I will send someone be safe." He said and hung up.

I sighed and went to the bathroom, since there was one in his room.

I washed my face and looked at myself on the mirror.

"When did my life turn into a horror movie" I sighed and wiped my tears off. As I was still lost in my thoughts, I heard someone opening the door.

I slowly peeped out of the room. A nurse came inside wearing a surgical mask, she looked suspicious. She took out a syringe and went to Jon's drip.

I tiptoed to her and before she did anything I held her head from behind and pushed her on the floor. I immediately rang the bell as I pinned her down. The other nurses and the doctor ran inside.

"Now bitch tell me who send you huh". I said pinning her down.

" I would rather die and he will kill me anyway". She injected herself. I immediately let her go and within minutes foam was coming out of her mouth.

She started having seizures the nurses tried to help but it was too late, she died immediately. Her phone which was on the floor rang.

I answered and kept quiet.

"Did you finish the mission"

It was the robotic voice again.

I laughed."I told you to bring all you got,I would rather put my life on the line for the man that I love.So bring it on".I hung up and looked at the doctor.

"You're in charge of this place,you should make sure the security is tight but no a murderer almost killed my man while you're in your office eating mango achaar.I will make sure the whole security is fired".

I went to the guards that Max had assigned.

I kicked all five of them on the groins.

" You're here to make sure Jon is safe but he was almost killed under your watch...you bloody useless amateurs... Go to hell go away I will do the job myself ".

I went back inside the rooms leaving the man nursing their sacks.

I informed Max about everything that had happened.

Within an hour they were at the hospital and the fact that the media was all over the place was not helping.

I buried my head in my hands because I felt clueless and useless.

" This person doesn't want me to be with Jon and he is on a mission to kill him.This ain't no ordinary person, this is big"I said.

Lewis rubbed his head."I wonder who could it be?"

Nicki looked at me and shook her head."April this is definitely not your year".

I sighed and looked down.

"Wait a minute April you might know it is". My inner voice said.

Saul.

" Poker face"

I wasn't feeling easy around Eve anymore because she has been receiving dodgy phone calls and answering them in secret. I knew she was pretending. Now I was certain she was up to something.

"Babe are you done showering. Should I come and join?" She said.

If she was going to pretend then I would do the same. After all two can play the game.

"I'm almost done babe give me a minute" I said.

I dried myself and walked out of the bathroom. She had already chosen some clothes for me.

I wore them. I avoided eating her food and went to work. I wasn't even concentrating on work I was wondering what Eve might be up to.

I knocked off a little bit early and went home.

When I arrived the place was dead silent. I slowly walked upstairs and found Eve on a call.

She didn't hear or see me coming.

"Ok ok...I know..I know...we can't really steal his money dad he will be suspicious.... No no listen to me...He will know that its us because you're like so broke dad and your company is not doing well..If he looses his money and your company starts blooming he will know he is not stupid ok.....no no listen to me dad for once will you...We can't messs with the law its his area of specialty and will loose this...we have to play it smart....yea yea dad listen to me...What I will do is I will convince him to open our joint account and transfer all his money into that account... I will also open an account where I will be transferring the money bit by bit ok...You just have to be patient....He will fall for it obviously he thinks I'm changed you know and he is doing everything I say because I'm noelw thee good wife I he always wanted to have..(giggles) Yes yes...well its a pity that he doesn't know that he is actually our card to a very good life...anyway bye...bye...yes...yes I will do that". She hung up and silently went downstairs after recording the whole conversation. They were so stupid to think that I was going to fall for the plan. Now I had more reasons to divorce her ass.

"Honey I'm home" I shouted while in the lounge.

She walked downstairs, then came and gave me a kiss and took my briefcase."Ohhh hey you're back early today.Should I run you a bath.Ohhh your meal is in the microwave I would heat it up for you".

Only if she wasn't pretending she would make a good wife.

I smiled."No I'm cool.I actually came to take Ali her grandma wants to see her she misses her.So I'm not staying for long"

She smiled."Okay let me dress her up".She ran upstairs. After a while she came back with Ali who was dressed in all pink.

I took my girl and walked out.I drove to my mother's place and it wasn't hard to convince her to stay with Ali for a few days because she had actually missed her.My mother is actually the best person in the world but its only that she loves money way much.Anyway after dropping Ali off I went and transferred my money to my mystery account which Eve knew nothing about.I only left 1k in the account she knew.Well let's see how she was going to play this.if I was going to put on a poker face then so be it.I would act so foolish in front of her and see how it goes..

However a part of me was hurt deeply.God knows I had learn to love Eve for the last years and

she didn't even love me a bit.I did everything for her,for us.I spent nine years tolerating her nonsense and stubbornness because I was used to it and I loved her.Couldn't she at least return the same feeling, the same love we could have been fine had she not listened to her father's bad advice.

I sighed and drove to a bar.A strong liquid was going to help me out here.

I ordered shots but still they couldn't wash the pain away.I started drinking from the bottle and well that kinda helps,after some time I was super drunk but I still had my senses though.After paying I staggered out of the bar and went into my car.I started driving in that state and I osrked in front of an apartment. I didn't even know or remember how I reached there.I walked in zig zag and rang the bell.

After a while the door opened.

I smiled naughtily. "Ruth...ohh my....ain't this great God... you just send me and angel" I burped.

She sighed."You're so drunk"She helped me inside which was a struggle and threw me on a cosy couch. She went away leaving me singing .She came back with a bowl with water and a towel.She knelt down and removed my shoes and placed my feet in the water which was warm.She washed my feet and wiped them .All along I was just smiling like a retard.After she was done she came and helped up to one of the rooms.

She laid me carefully on the bed.She was about to walkout I held her hand.

"It gues so much....I had learnt to love her...it Hurst so very deeply... How could she do this to me..how could she...It hurts Ruth" I said.

She continuously pushed my hair back without saying a thing and after a while I was fast asleep.

End of chapter 3 1

Let's comment and share!